00038064

BOMBAY BRANCH
OF THE
ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY
TOWN HALL, BOMBAY.

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 13 February, 2016

38064
ae

Dedicated,

WITH THE MOST PROFOUND ACKNOWLEDGMENTS,

TO

THE DUTCH AND THE DUTCH GOVERNMENTAL AUTHORITIES OF INDIA,

BY

THE AUTHORESS.

HH. C. 10

11-4
Fiji Lab.
38064
00038064

Lady's Second
Her journey round the
world Vol II

PREFACE.

by Ida Pfeiffer

I KNOW it is the common fate of dedications and prefaces not to be read; but I cannot possibly make public this journal of my wanderings without addressing a few words to those through whose help it has been called into existence—namely, the Dutch residents, and especially the governmental authorities of Dutch India.

When I first left my native country nothing was farther from my thoughts than making a Second Journey round the World. The sum that my small property enabled me to devote to travelling expenses was very small, and, even when increased by a grant of 150*l.* from the Austrian Government, was still inadequate to such an extensive journey.

I went to London with the intention of embarking for Australia; but I was obliged to renounce this intention, for just before my journey to England the discovery of the great gold-fields of that country had occurred, emigrants were rushing thither from every part of the world, and the cost of living there rising to a height beyond all calculation.

I scarcely knew then which way to direct my steps; but fortunately for myself I decided for Dutch India, where I was so kindly received and so effectually supported by the officers of government, from the highest to the lowest, that I was enabled to carry my plans into execution better than in any other country in the world; and I must regard them as virtually the authors of my Second Journey. But my obligations are not merely to the official persons; many private individuals also, and, amongst others, my German countrymen, contributed valuable assistance, in presenting me with a ticket for the voyage by steamer

from Batavia to Sumatra and back; and the Directors of the two Steam Boat Companies, Messrs. Frees and Van der Vrese, subsequently offered me free passages by any of their boats. I have no other way of expressing my gratitude to these gentlemen than begging them to accept the dedication of this work, and the assurance that I am, and shall ever be, profoundly sensible of their kindness.

To the Americans, also, I am deeply indebted for many kind attentions, and for free passages in their ships and magnificent steamers. In no country, Dutch India alone excepted, did I receive from the inhabitants more marks of distinction than from the citizens of the United States; and from the bottom of my heart I thank them.

THE AUTHORESS.

CONTENTS

OF

THE FIRST VOLUME.

CHAPTER I.

Page

Arrival in London.—What is Comfort?—Sabbath Observance.—Peculiarities in English Life.—Going to Church. — Sights of London.—The Environs.—The Great Exhibition of 1851 - - - - - 1

CHAP. II.

Cape Town.—Dangerous Meeting with two Negresses.—Malay.—Singapore.—Sarawak.—Rajah Brooke.—Malay and Chinese Dwellings. — Excursion to the Dyaks and the Antimony Mines - - - - 32

CHAP. III.

Departure from Sarawak.—Compelled Return.—Journey to Scaran.—The Independent Dyaks.—Human Heads. —Journey along the Luppa.—Night of Horror.—En-

Page
counter with a Tribe at War.—Crossing the Schämel Mountain.—Ceremonious Reception by the Sultan of Sintang - - - - - - - 76

CHAP. IV.

Pontianah.—Excursion to Landah.—A Chinese Kapthay.—Another pedestrian Journey.—A Mud Bath in the Morass.—Bamboo Bridges.—The Language of Signs.—Supper with the Panam-bakan.—The Diamond Mines.—Return to Pontianah - - - - - 125

CHAP. V.

Pontianah. — Mortgages. — Opium Farming. — Opium Smokers. — Amok. — Journey to Sambas. — The Pangero-Rato.—Courtesy of the Dutch Officers. — Return to Pontianah.—The Boa.—Some Remarks on the Races of Borneo - - - - - - - 151

CHAP. VI.

Batavia.—Things remarkable. — Chinese Play.—Buitenzorg. — Performance at the Governor-General's.—Typanas. — Ascent of the Pangerang. — Pandong. — The Tea Plantations.—Coffee Mills.—Sulphur. — Return to Batavia. — Excursion to Tangerang.—Popular Recreations - - - - - - - 175

CHAP. VII.

Sumatra. — Arrival in Padang.—Journey into the Inte-

Page

rior.—Fort Koch.—Kotto-Godong.—Strange Laws.—Muara Sipongie.—Dissuasion from the Journey.—The Battakers—Their Customs and Laws.—Farewell to the last Europeans - - - - - 217

CHAP. VIII.

Continuation of the Travels in Sumatra.—Journey on Foot.—Night Bivouac in the primeval Forest.—First Meeting with the Cannibals.—Holy-Bonar.—Sacrifice of a Buffalo Calf.—The Valley of Silindong.—Hostile Reception.—Forced Return.—Repeated wild Scenes.—Return to the Dutch Territory.—Paya-Kombo.—Ascent of the Merapi.—Return to Padang - - 261

CHAP. IX.

Java.—Samarang.—The Mud Springs of Grobogan.—Visit to the free Principalities of Djogokarta and Surakarta.—The Temple of Boro-Budoo.—The sacred Turtles.—An Audience of the Sultan of Solo.—Princely Funeral.—An Audience of the Susuhunan.—Return to Samarang.—Journey to Surabaya - - - - 320

CHAP. X.

Macassar.—Banda.—Earthquake.—Nutmeg Plantations.—Amboyna.—Excursion to the Negeri-Emma.—Saparua.—Ceram.—Travelling on Foot through the Interior of Ceram.—Arrival at Wahai.—The Alfores.—Return to Amboyna.—Ternate.—Visit to the Sultan - - 356

CHAP. XI.

Page

Celebes. — Manado. — Journey to the Highlands.—The Dutch Missionaries.—Macassar.—Journey into the Interior of Celebes.—Maros.—The Choice of a Regent.—Tannette. — Barru. — Festival of teeth-filing.—Paré-Paré.—The learned Malay King - - - - 406

Preiffer Ida

A LADY'S SECOND VOYAGE

ROUND

THE WORLD.

CHAPTER I.

ARRIVAL IN LONDON.—WHAT IS COMFORT?—SABBATH OBSERVANCE.—PECULIARITIES IN ENGLISH LIFE.—GOING TO CHURCH.—SIGHTS OF LONDON.—THE ENVIRONS.—THE GREAT EXHIBITION OF 1851.

A JOURNEY from Vienna to London is now a mere little excursion of three or four days, but I took nearly a month to it myself, as I had some visits to pay to friends in Prague and Hamburg, so that, having left my native city on the 18th of March (1851), I only landed in London on the 10th of April.

It was early in the morning when our steamer entered the harbour of the metropolis of the world.

The forest of masts, which from a distance appeared quite impenetrable, gradually unfolded itself to our view as we advanced; and the countless vessels of all sizes, from the largest East Indiaman to the tiniest yacht, — some lying at anchor, some unfurling their sails, and setting off on their voyages in various directions, or being taken in tow by little smoking bustling steamers, — all this afforded certainly a grand and stirring sight; but I rather missed the variety of costume and physiognomy that I had expected in a place where all the nations of the world congregate. I saw only European sailors, and English workmen; and in this respect any East Indian harbour, and especially that of Bombay, is incomparably more interesting to a spectator. There you see people of all countries and all colours, and the most extraordinary and amusing variety of costumes.

We landed at the Custom House — a spot that I approached with some trepidation, as I had heard terrible things of the severities exercised there; how every trifle had to be paid for, and that even one's pockets were not safe from the intrusive hands of fiercely eager custom-house officials. But I had alarmed myself very unnecessarily. A very slight glance was taken at my possessions; my passport

was asked for indeed, but when my name had been written in a book, it was returned to me immediately. I was told I wanted no such thing as what we call an *Aufenthalts-Karte*—a "permission to reside." My passport was never asked for again; and when subsequently I shipped myself for Africa, no police or other authority appeared to think they had the least to do with the matter.

The impression made on me by the busy throng of life in the streets of London was not altogether an agreeable one. The hurrying and driving, the choking mass of vehicles that made it really a perilous undertaking to cross the street, the never-ceasing noise, deafened and bewildered me, so that I was heartily glad when I at last found myself safe in my own room.

The greatest bustle of the town is, as is well known, in the city; for here are the counting-houses of the merchants, the Exchange, the Bank, the Mansion-House (the residence of the Lord Mayor), &c. The merchants do not live in the city, but only pass their mornings there,—from about eleven o'clock to four or five; as the abundance of all means of communication — railroads, steam-boats, omnibuses, &c. — make it very easy for them to live in distant parts of the town, or even sometimes eight or ten

miles in the country. The trains from the railway-stations often go every quarter of an hour; the steamers, from the first bridge of London to the last, every five minutes; and the omnibuses are in everlasting motion. These last are not very desirable conveyances, especially for a foreigner; for a considerable amount of study is required to determine which is the right one to get into. The inscriptions on the outside do indeed name the chief stations they go to, but different omnibuses pass frequently through quite different parts of the town to reach the same point; and if you address your inquiry to the conductor, he will generally reply with gentlemanly composure in the affirmative, whatever place you inquire for, and then set down the unhappy stranger — it may be rather farther off the place he wishes to go to than he was when he got in. A drive in an omnibus can indeed in no respect be reckoned among the pleasures of London life. The carriages are tolerably large, but they take one-and-twenty passengers — twelve in and nine outside, — so that of course one finds no very spacious accommodation in the seats; and the perpetual stopping, and getting in and out—all in the greatest hurry, — the rainy days, with their accompaniments of wet clothes, dripping umbrellas, and dirty shoes, have to

a stranger arriving with delightful anticipations of the supreme *comfort* to be met with in England, rather a disappointing effect.

This same English comfort, indeed, of which we hear so much, must be understood, it seems to me, with considerable qualifications, or must depend much on previous habits of life. I, for instance, do not find it comfortable to be almost always shivering when I am at home; and no where else have I suffered this inconvenience so frequently as in England. These open fires do, indeed, warm the fortunate person who sits immediately next to them, and who has nothing else to do than to warm himself; but not the unlucky wight who may happen to be engaged writing or sewing on the other side of the room, and pen or needle will soon fall from his or her shivering fingers.

Now, in a country that has to contend with cold, eight months out of the twelve, I do not consider this a particularly comfortable arrangement; but the English are so immoderately fond of the sight of a fire, that rather than not see it they will often patiently endure the not feeling it.

Again, as every family, even in the most narrow circumstances, will generally insist on having a house to itself, the houses are of very narrow frontage, and

the occupants of them have to pass a considerable part of their lives in going up and down stairs. Of course I do not speak here of the rich, who can undoubtedly surround themselves with every comfort in England; but so they can elsewhere, and mostly at far less cost than here. My remarks relate only to the habitations of the middle classes.

One great and unavoidable inconvenience lies in the enormous size of the town. You cannot pay a visit, or attend to a matter of business, or take any amusement without a considerable expenditure of time and money. Visiting, especially, is expensive, as you cannot make use of railroads or omnibuses when you are required to go in anything like full dress. If you adopt the cheapest mode of conveyance for occasions of this kind, and take a cab, at eight-pence a mile *, as you may easily have nine or ten miles to drive there and back, no trifling addition is made to the cost of your evening's entertainment. As for the opera, that in England is only for wealthy people; for a box costs three or four guineas, and full dress is imperative.

It is probably on account of these difficulties and expenses that you find in English houses so little of

* This was the charge when I was in London, but it has been since reduced to sixpence, at least nominally.

that pleasant easy sociality to which we more southern people are so accustomed. There are dinners and evening parties in abundance, but people do not come together in an unconstrained agreeable manner. The life of the women of the middle rank seemed to me particularly monotonous. They are mostly alone all day, and when their husbands return in the evening from their business, they are generally too tired for conversation, and do not much like to be disturbed by visitors; but sit down in an arm-chair by the fire, take a newspaper, and now and then, I believe, fall asleep.

The Sunday, which in other countries, though regarded as much as here as a day of prayer and religious worship, is also considered as a suitable one for innocent recreation, is in England so very often made dull and wearisome that the liveliest Southlander sinks under its weight. In many of the regular old-fashioned English families the very children are not allowed to amuse themselves with their balls and playthings; a cold dinner is taken that the cook may have time to go to church morning and afternoon; several hours each time are spent in the long English service; and no book but one on an expressly religious subject must be looked into during the whole day.

The custom of assembling the whole family, servants and all, morning and evening, for a short religious service, I thought excellent; but to pass a whole day in prayer with any beneficial effect really seems to me impossible.

Prayer should be uttered with vivid consciousness of what one is doing, with devout attention, in spirit and in truth; not merely from the lips in lifeless formality of repetition. Prayers of this kind one can hardly hope will be answered.

In no country in the world, Persia and China excepted, can one so easily offend against the laws of etiquette as in England. If at dinner you should take your fork in your right instead of your left hand,—if you should cut your meat into small pieces all at once, instead of cutting off each piece as you require it,—or in a hundred other little matters vary from the modes established here, you must be content to resign at once all pretension to good breeding. Sometimes, indeed, as for instance, if you were to take any one into your bedroom, you would be considered to have actually trespassed against morality, and committed something like a crime; though to us such things would seem entirely insignificant. And yet there are cases, where what would appear to us a decided impropriety is here perfectly allowable and

customary. That two sisters, two maid-servants, or any two feminine persons should sleep in the same bed is in England so usual that no one would scruple, if they had visitors staying with them, to make such an arrangement; yet this we should regard as a practice unhealthy, unpleasant, and, in many ways, objectionable. I have heard more in condemnation of it, indeed, than I can possibly explain here; but I earnestly wish to call attention to it, and if my remarks should induce a single family to abolish this bad custom, I shall feel that I have been rewarded for my plain speaking.

Again, we should see impropriety in the custom of a newly married pair getting into a carriage, with servants and horses decorated with all the outward and visible signs of a wedding, and in that style proceeding on a tour, and entering all the hotels in their route. Yet this in England is a mere matter of course. I mention these things partly in the hope of rendering English people rather less severe on foreigners, who may be guilty of slight departures from their own code of etiquette. I might hint, too, that it strikes a traveller from a strictly monarchical country like Austria as rather curious to find that in free constitutional England the nobility and the Court are regarded with more profound — perhaps

I should say servile — awe than in our land of absolutism, even before 1848. With all respect for Her Majesty Victoria, I could not help smiling at the importance that seemed to be attached to the question whether I had seen the Queen, Prince Albert, or the Prince of Wales?

Can it be that the pride of aristocracy and wealth have here reached their culminating point? and that there is scarcely a country in the world where people would do so much to gain admittance into stiff, cold, lordly circles, whose chief care is to exclude them? There is one other place in Europe however where the veneration for lords and titles appears to be as profound and heartfelt as in England, and that is, strange to say, in the little republic of Hamburg. I remember during my stay there in 1848-9, there arrived in the city a certain Prince of Leiningen (a second or third son) with his tutor,—and did not the republican Hamburgers strive one with another for his princely notice? Did they not give dinners and soirees and balls in his honour? Was not that citizen of the free Hanseatic town a proud and happy man whose invitations the prince accepted,—and still more the mother with whose daughter he danced? And was not every word that fell from the Serene Highness's lips clever, and witty, and wise? But to return to London.

The churches make a singular impression when seen for the first time. The whole space, with the exception of a few benches, is divided like a theatre into boxes and reserved seats, the former luxuriously carpetted and cushioned, and furnished with footstools and an assortment of the *handsomest* books of devotion. I asked how it was that I saw no ill-dressed people, and the answer was that "those who could not dress themselves properly of course would stay away."

I remember being told at Singapore that the Governor had given express orders that the gentlemen should appear at church in black frock coats, and the ladies in equally elegant attire; so no one, I suppose, who is not pretty well off in the world need presume to think himself an acceptable visitor in the House of God. I am sorry to hear that in many countries the Catholics are following the example of the Protestants in this degrading frivolity. May Heaven cure them both of their pride, and teach them better!

When I went to see the cathedral St. Paul's, — which, as well as Westminster Abbey, is of course shown out of the hours of service, — three sailors presented themselves at the same time to gain admittance, but were rejected and turned back—I was

told, because they declined paying the admission money of twopence a-piece. I will say no more on this subject, however, as I hear that this scandal has been abolished; but I could not but wonder how such a custom could ever have been established.

It is not my purpose to attempt any description of London, which would be merely to repeat in a very feeble and imperfect manner what has been said often, and better said before. If a stranger wishes to gain some general idea of the appearance and extent of the town, he would do well to climb to the top of St. Paul's, the Monument, or the Duke of York's column. I chose the Monument, and had certainly no agreeable impression from the enormous mass of houses that I saw spread out before me, in which the individual beauties, such as the pretty squares, were quite lost. The handsome bridges over the Thames did indeed attract attention, but the general effect was of a wide plain covered with dingy brick buildings, and the distant outlines of which were veiled in the fog that is seldom entirely absent from it.

The feverish rush of life through the thronged streets of London can hardly be imagined by any one who has not witnessed it. That in the streets of the Neapolitan and Sicilian cities does indeed at the first glance bear some resemblance to it; for

in the evening at least, the whole population of these places (the sick excepted) is turned into the streets. The difference is that there the people are gay and noisy, and evidently out for pleasure, whilst in London every one looks serious and anxious, as if in eager pursuit of business and money. I really felt frightened the first time I ventured alone into this living torrent, and did not dare to ask my way of any one of the multitude who were hurrying past me as if driven by steam: but let me do them the justice to say, that however violent their hurry had seemed to be, they never failed to stop and listen politely to my question; nay, many even turned back with me and went considerably out of their way, in order to put me right.

The handsomest part of the town is that commonly known as the "West End," in which are the parks, squares, club-houses, and private palaces, or residences of the nobility; but these are enumerated in every Guide Book.

Among the public edifices, that which struck me most was Bedlam — the Hospital for the Insane. It is a fine building, surrounded by gardens, and its arrangements are very simple and appropriate. The dormitories are divided along their whole length by partitions into three compartments, of which the

centre one serves for the keepers to sit and the patients to walk up and down in. The two sides are again divided into small chambers that will just contain a bed and a bench which is fastened to the floor, and the doors of these cells have small openings, through which the keepers can observe the conduct of the occupants. Each division possesses its own separate washing and bathing rooms, dining hall, and room for receiving visitors.

I was much struck with the difference in the aspect of the male and female insane.. The men almost without exception had it stamped on their faces, that a profligate course of life had been the accompaniment, if not the cause, of their state of mind. The keeper led me through a part of the garden, in which a number of these unhappy men were assembled, and I really thought myself fortunate when I had passed through the midst of them without experiencing any personal insult. I do not think anything would induce me to take that walk again. The sight of the insane has always hitherto inspired me with feelings of sorrowful compassion; here I felt compassion certainly, but also I must own, fear, aversion, and disgust. The impression was very different from the sight of the female patients. Many of these poor creatures were sitting

quietly in a corner and weeping; one was carrying a great doll, and caressing and kissing it, as if it had been a living baby. What may not these sufferers have gone through before they came here? What mournful histories, full of vain struggles of grief and despair are here buried in oblivion!

The British Museum is a magnificent building, and for the treasures with which its halls are filled, certainly the grandest in the world; and it would have astonished me even more than it did, had I not immediately before had an opportunity of devoting much time and attention to the examination of that of Berlin. The collection of antiquities from Nineveh, however, is absolutely unrivalled, and the excavations by which they have been obtained have been made partly at the expense of the Museum itself. Many of these treasures have already been set up in suitable places, but almost as many are still lying buried in the cellars for want of room to display them.

The College of Surgeons contains rare skeletons of men and animals, and sculls from all the nations of the world, as well as a collection of monstrous births and other equally remarkable objects. Professor Owen, one of the most distinguished men in England in the department of anatomy, is the

Director of this college, and it is under his superintendence that it has reached its present point of perfection. I was so fortunate as to make his acquaintance, and he gave me permission to visit the place at any time, and pointed out many things to my attention. Not less obligation am I under to Mr. Waterhouse of the British Museum, who also devoted many hours to me, and instructed me in the mode of making collections. And I will take this opportunity of making my acknowledgments to the Privy Counsellor Lichtenstein, the Director of the Berlin Museum, who allowed me to come there whenever I pleased, and frequently conducted me himself through the apartments. To him and the above-mentioned gentlemen I return my sincerest thanks for the complaisance and kindness they have shown me.

Besides the British Museum, and the College of Surgeons, there are other museums, amongst which the India House, devoted exclusively to articles from India, is the most important.

The National Gallery of pictures is not very rich in *chef-d'œuvres*. Three pictures by Murillo pleased me best; but the galleries of many private persons contain, I understand, some splendid productions of art.

To see the elegant world of London you must visit the parks, Hyde Park and the Regent's, lying in the west and north-west of the town. There you will find throngs of superb carriages, and of equestrians of all ages and both sexes, mounted on fine horses of every variety, and ladies even driving their own carriages without attracting any particular attention. It is also not considered at all improper for a lady, or even a young girl, to ride in company with gentlemen in no way related to her. In the Regent's Park is the Zoological Garden, a most remarkably fine collection of exotic animals, — lions, tigers, leopards, giraffes, and others; of astonishing size and beauty, and also a magnificent specimen of the hippopotamus. The department devoted to reptiles and large serpents is also very rich. Close to Hyde Park lie three other parks, — St. James's, the Green Park, and Kensington Gardens, — the latter much visited, and abounding in trees of venerable age and fine growth.

These parks are all laid out much in the same style, with spacious grassy lawns and avenues and groups of fine large trees and shrubs. Flowers are mostly in conservatories and greenhouses.

Covent Garden is a market, and no garden at all,

but well worthy of a visit, especially on a Saturday, for the enormous mass of vegetables, fruits, and flowers, provided for the wants and enjoyments of this vast city.

In the City of London, properly so called, there are fewer sights than in the more aristocratic west-end, but many extremely interesting objects nevertheless; amongst which is the Tower, one of the most ancient buildings of London; the Bank; the Exchange; Guildhall,—the latter boasting a splendid saloon for festive occasions; the Mansion-house, the residence of the Lord Mayor; and the Docks, a little world in themselves, with deep, broad basins and canals lined entirely with massive freestone, in which the largest East-Indiamen can come quite close up to the warehouses and discharge their cargoes. These warehouses are five or six stories high, and their vaults contain the most enormous wine-cellars in the world. The Docks are surrounded by strong high walls, and gates, which are locked in the evening.

In the City lies the much-talked-of Thames Tunnel, certainly a most astonishing work, but which made much less impression on me than I had expected; partly, perhaps, from its insignificant entrance. A small, almost mean-looking house, is

built over a wide, round opening; and it is not till you have descended many steps, to an almost terrific depth, that you reach a high-vaulted passage, which is the actual Tunnel. A similar long flight leads up at the other end; and the passage itself has two rows of columns which support the roof and divide the Tunnel into three avenues. Two of these are left free for passengers, and the middle one is fitted up with shops. The Tunnel is handsomely illuminated with gas; and when you consider that a mighty stream is rolling and great ships sailing over your head, a feeling almost of awe is awakened. But this wonderful work, which cost enormous sums of money, and many human lives, is really of no use. The shareholders have suffered greatly; for the receipts from the toll, and the rents of the shops, of which very few are let, scarcely cover the current expenses; and since, in the course of time, extensive and costly repairs must be undertaken if the Tunnel is to be maintained, it is not improbable that, before long, it will have gone entirely to ruin. The chief causes of this failure are said to be the remote position of the Tunnel and the inconvenience of the entrance. By way of conclusion to my visit to the City, I went to see Barclay and Per-

kins'* brewery, and the public baths and wash-houses for the poorer classes; and I also took a walk through the Post Office.

In the brewery I was told from 1000 to 1500 sacks of malt are used every day. Among the vats are many that contain 6000 gallons of beer: 400 workmen are employed, and 160 horses. And, by-the-by, I have never in any other part of the world seen such magnificent cart horses as in London; they are of most unusual size and strength, and extremely well-fed and cared for.

In the public lodging-houses, baths, and wash-houses, I found an institution that ought to be imitated in all the great towns of Europe. The lodging-houses for unmarried men consist of large halls, like those of Bedlam, divided by wooden partitions into small chambers, each of which receives abundance of light,—in the day, from without, and in the night, from great gas lamps suspended from the ceiling of the hall. The gas is kept burning till midnight, and each lodging-house contains a dining and lecture-

* It was here that in 1850, the Austrian General Von Haynau—renowned for the length of his mustachios, and the facility with which he pronounced sentences of death after the suppression of the Hungarian insurrection—met with a most unexpected and summary punishment. He escaped, as is well known, barely with his life.

hall, and a spacious kitchen, in which fire and hot water are always ready for the men to cook their meals. The price, for each person, is only three shillings a-week. Similar houses are about to be erected for single women, and some for families are already in existence, which consist of sets of three small rooms, and a kitchen and coal-cellar. Water is laid on to each kitchen; and the rent for the whole is only five or six shillings a-week. In the wash-houses every woman has a separate place, where she can wash her little stock of linen unseen by her neighbours. There are two taps, one for cold and the other for hot water, over each tub; and the drying is carried on very expeditiously in small closets, heated by pipes, and supplied with poles; and there is also a machine to wring the water from large things, such as counterpanes, sheets, &c. The price paid for all this accommodation is only a penny an hour. Associated with the wash-houses, are baths, where there are little chambers furnished with large bathing-tubs of metal, or white glazed ware, and kept extremely clean. The charge for a warm bath, of the first class, is only sixpence, and for a cold one threepence. Those rather inferior in their accommodations cost but twopence and a penny.

The Post Office should be visited by a stranger

on Saturday afternoon from five to six o'clock, at which hour, to a moment, it closes. To have a good view of the crowd, which until that hour increases every moment, he should take his place in the great hall; but let him see that he gets a safe one, for people often get hurt in the tremendous crowding occasioned by the eagerness of every one to post his letters before the clock strikes. They are, indeed, received up to nine o'clock, but the postage increases with every quarter of an hour.

I saw a good deal of the environs of London, partly in excursions that I made to Woolwich, Kew, Windsor, Chiswick, and Greenwich, &c., and partly in visits that carried me often ten or twelve miles into the country. In the lovely green of the meadows, and the rich and early vegetation, I found everything that I had read or heard of it amply confirmed. It was only in the beginning of the month of April, and already the shrubs and hedges were out in leaf, and the prettiest little flowers were springing from the rich emerald carpet of the meadows. The holly, the Portuguese laurel, and many other shrubs, retain their leaves through the winter, and rejoice the eye with the beauty of their dark shining leaves. This perpetual freshness of vegetable life in England is ascribed to the moderate climate, the constant damp,

and the saline particles with which the atmosphere is impregnated. In spite of its high northern latitude, and the severe and long winter, which often sets in at the end of September and lasts till March, England seldom suffers from that piercing dry cold, which in much more southerly countries in central Europe benumbs both vegetable and animal life. The snow seldom lies on the ground above five or six days together, and the cold is not so great but that the sheep can be left in the open air, as in Spain and Portugal.

The finest gardens in the immediate environs of London are those at Chiswick and Kew, in the first of which take place the exhibitions of flowers, in the months of May, June, and July. The exhibition only lasts one day; and I should certainly never have imagined that for a display of this kind rainy weather would be desirable—and yet it was so. In fine weather all the gay world of London resorts to these flower-shows; but the purpose of the meeting is rather to display their own finery than to see the flowers. Bands of music play in various parts of the gardens; and the thronging of the perpetually moving multitude makes a real examination of the supposed objects of the exhibition almost impossible.

I had, however, on my visit the advantage of very

favourable weather — that is to say, it rained incessantly, and scarcely any one came to disturb me in my admiration of the glorious specimens exhibited in greenhouses and under tents.

The splendour of the collection, especially of the exotics, is almost indescribable. I really saw many specimens of these beautiful strangers that were finer and fuller of blossom than I ever saw in their native country. The display of fruit was less remarkable, with the exception of the pine-apples, which were of extraordinary size, and often weighed ten or twelve pounds.

At Kew is partly a garden and partly a park; there are stately trees, extensive lawns, clear mirror-like ponds, artificial hills, summer-houses, and beds of flowers; but the great fame of the garden is for its exotic flowers and trees, amongst which are palms eighty feet high, kept in immense glass houses. One of these might well deserve the name of Glass, or, as it is the fashion to say, *Crystal* Palace. It consists of two wings, and a central part, or transept, that rises like a cupola to the height of above a hundred feet; and on looking at it, it is easy to see how the idea of a similar edifice for the great Industrial Exhibition of London may have arisen. A gallery runs round the top, whence you obtain a

general view of the flowers, shrubs, and palms; and it does not require much imagination to obtain from it some imperfect conception of the primeval forests of Brazil.

In the arsenal of Woolwich I did not see much that was new, or that I had not seen before on a smaller scale at Venice. One of the things that interested me most, was the carriage in which Napoleon was taken to his grave in St. Helena. It was the same in which he used to drive out; with an iron frame, covered with black cloth, substituted for the seats.

The drive to Woolwich by the rail is not very agreeable on account of a tunnel two miles long; and as neither tunnel nor carriage is lit, you sit for several minutes plunged in the most profound darkness. Here again I was struck by the capricious nature of the notions of propriety and impropriety in this country. On many of the railroads, men are most strictly forbidden to enter the waiting-rooms assigned to ladies, yet they are open, and in broad daylight. But no one finds any objection to their sitting with ladies in the impenetrable night of the tunnel, though the newspapers have often borne witness to the facility thus afforded for theft and other incidents not strictly consistent with morality.

Windsor Castle, which lies about twenty miles from London, is one of the finest buildings in the Gothic style, not only in England, but in all Europe. It stands on a gentle elevation, and is built of massive stone. Part of the building dates from William the Conqueror, but the actual founder of the Castle as it now stands, and of the very pretty chapel, was Edward the Third, though many improvements have been made in it by subsequent sovereigns. The Castle consists of two courts,—the castle itself, and the round tower, the architecture of which is greatly admired. The apartments are lofty, spacious, and really royal in appearance, their arrangement extremely simple, and every one has a separate name as well as its peculiar historical recollections. The gallery contains portraits of the most renowned sovereigns of ancient and modern times,—the likenesses not very remarkable if I may judge by those I happen to have seen—the Emperors of Austria and Russia, the Queen of Prussia, &c., whom I could scarcely recognise. The chapel has some very fine paintings on glass; and here a fee of sixpence a head was demanded by the attendants, though it is expressly stated on the admission card that nothing is to be given to any one. The prospect from the tower is beautiful. You can look into twelve coun-

ties, and follow the course of the Thames for an immense distance.

On the hill on which the Castle stands lies also the pretty little town of Windsor; and southward of it extends a magnificent park, four miles long and fifteen in circuit, containing majestic ancient trees, forming stately avenues overshadowing lovely paths both for walking and riding, and some spots, as Virginia Water, specially renowned for their beauty.

Greenwich Hospital was formerly a summer palace of Queen Elizabeth, but now serves, as is well known, for an asylum to invalids of the royal navy. There 2500 men there, and every one has his own little sleeping room, with a bed, a chair, and a cupboard. The dining-rooms are lofty handsome rooms with vaulted ceilings, and the people sit at long tables, in parties of four men each. To every one of these parties is given soup, three pounds of meat (alternately beef, mutton, and pork, occasionally salt), four pounds of potatoes, and a fine large white loaf. They also get beans and other vegetables, flour puddings, and every day beer and tea. I visited the Hospital intentionally at dinner time, in order to be present at the distribution of food, and I found here, as in every public institution of England that I have seen, that the provisions supplied were

both abundant in quantity and excellent in their kind, not as in some other countries I could name, where the poor only have wholesome food on the days when a great man or an inspector pays them a visit. Strange to say, too, the officers of the institutions I allude to always happen to become aware of these visits beforehand.

The distribution is made in the following manner. The food is prepared in two caldrons; the meat is cut into portions of three pounds each before it is put in, and the four pounds of potatoes are hung in a net. When the meat is cooked the caldron is emptied into a large tub, and the soup runs off through an opening in the bottom into another tub. One man then takes out a three-pound portion of meat, which he puts into a deep dish, and another bales out the proper quantity of soup in a vessel that exactly holds so much, and pours it over the meat; a third then takes out the net of potatoes from the caldron, in which it has been boiled by steam; and the distribution goes on with incredible rapidity, yet in the most orderly manner.

There is a small building by the side of the principal one, that serves as a hospital for the sick, who are entirely separated from the healthy, and have even their own garden to walk in. A large shady

park is also at the service, not only of the sailors, but of the whole public; and in this park lies the Observatory, through which the English draw their first meridian. The Hospital likewise possesses a small but pretty picture gallery, with representations of renowned naval battles, and portraits of distinguished naval heroes. Some old garments of Nelson are preserved under glass-cases, and amongst them are the coat and waistcoat through which in the battle of Trafalgar the fatal bullet entered his breast.

One very remarkable sight that I witnessed in London, though only of a temporary nature, must not be omitted, namely, the Great Industrial Exhibition in Hyde Park; and I must express my great obligation to the President of the Austrian department, Mr. Buschek, who furnished me with a ticket for the opening and for five subsequent visits.

The opening took place, as is well known, with great solemnity. The Queen and Prince Albert appeared with their eldest children, the ministers, and principal nobility of the Empire, and the ambassadors from all the countries that took any part in the Exhibition. After a short speech by Prince Albert to the Queen, a prayer, and a hymn, the whole procession moved on slowly through the

building, stopping here and there at some of the most remarkable objects, while to the anxiously watching people without, the most important movements were announced by the firing of guns.

The ceremony began at ten in the morning; at twelve o'clock it was over: and only then were the holders of what were called season tickets admitted.

I went out of the Crystal Palace a short time before the royal family left it, in order to have an opportunity of observing the deportment of the people. There was an immense throng of carriages, all very splendid, but the coachmen and other servants wore a most absurd masquerade costume. The former had curled and powdered periwigs, on the tops of which were stuck little three-cornered hats, and many had also huge bunches of flowers on the breasts of their coats; and the other servants, of whom two stood behind almost every carriage, held great sticks in their hands. The royal carriage was surrounded by a few soldiers of the guards, some of the most magnificent looking men that can be seen in the world. Their uniforms also are particularly rich, and they ride very fine horses all of the same colour.

The behaviour of the people was exemplary beyond all description. Great as the crowd was, there

was no violent pushing, far less quarrelling or fighting, and never was there less stolen than on this day. Only two cases were mentioned at the police; and, strange as it may seem to *certain people in certain countries*, there was not a single soldier to be seen among the crowd. Simple policemen, with truncheons a foot long in their hands, were found sufficient to keep the people in the most perfect order; even they had nothing more to do than politely to request those who got into wrong places to move out of them. A gentle tap on the shoulder, and a "Move on, if you please," was quite enough, and every one "moved on" accordingly.

My readers, I do not doubt, will very willingly excuse my giving any further account of the "Great Exhibition." Countless books, pamphlets, and newspapers have trumpeted its fame to every corner of the world; and there can hardly be found any one who has not read much concerning it, and seen representations of the fairy-like "Crystal Palace" and the masterpieces exhibited in it from every industrial region in every land "from Indus to the Pole." I can only say that the sight was a memorable, never-to-be-forgotten one, and that I scarcely believe the like will ever be seen again.

CHAP. II.

CAPE TOWN.—DANGEROUS MEETING WITH TWO NEGRESSES.—MALAY.—SINGAPORE.—SARAWAK.—RAJAH BROOKE.—MALAY AND CHINESE DWELLINGS.—EXCURSION TO THE DYAKS AND THE ANTIMONY MINES.

It was on the evening of the 24th of May, 1851, that I betook myself on board the good ship Allandale, burden 300 tons, bound for the Cape of Good Hope. To my great astonishment I found no one there but the master, Captain Brodie, who informed me that he had given the entire crew, down to the cabin boys, permission to pass the night on shore, and that he himself was just about leaving the ship with a similar intention.

I was of course at liberty to do the same if I pleased; but as I had been living some miles away in the country, I thought it probable that if I did, I might not be back in time in the morning, so I resolved to stay quietly where I was, and, locking myself into my cabin, remained for that night

"monarch of all I surveyed," and constituted in my own person the whole ship's company.

On the following morning a steamer took us in tow as far as Gravesend, lying twenty miles from London, at what may be considered the mouth of the Thames, though the current is felt for fifty-eight miles farther, as far as the North Foreland. This night and the following day found us still lying opposite Gravesend, waiting for two sailors whom the captain had engaged, but who had failed to make their appearance; and they never came at all, so that he had to go back to London for others, and we did not finally sail till the 27th.

The voyage through the Channel was unfavourable; we had little wind, and during the first three days had to be continually coming to anchor. On the 30th so heavy a fog sunk down on the sea, that we could only see to the distance of a few hundred feet; and through the dense mist came the sounds of ships' bells and calling voices, giving notice of the precise position of other vessels, in order to avoid if possible a collision. These sounds had a somewhat mournful effect, and were not adapted to inspire any very cheerful anticipations concerning the long and dangerous voyage that lay before us. For sailing ships this is not less than 8000 miles, as they have

on account of the wind to make a considerable run to the westward, almost to the coast of Brazil; but steamers have not above 5000 miles to go to reach the Cape. It was not till the evening of the 2nd of April that we succeeded in reaching the Atlantic Ocean.

In these few days I had had time enough to discover that our captain was inclined to carry his frugality in the entertainment of his passengers rather to excess, for in no other vessel in any part of the world have I ever been so badly fed. The mate, who, as is customary in vessels of this class, had the superintendence of the kitchen, and who certainly did not appear at all profuse in his arrangements, was nevertheless very soon dismissed from his office for extravagance, and the worthy captain undertook it in person. His bill of fare was soon made. For breakfast, weak coffee without milk, and salt meat; dinner, peas-soup and salt meat; for the evening meal, tea and salt meat. Occasionally we had a fowl, or a hard lump of dough with a few raisins in it; and this, with common sea-biscuit, completed the list. As for ham, eggs, or even cheese, all such things were regarded by our economical captain as superfluous luxuries. He was, he informed me, about to take the command of an East-Indiaman,

and Heaven help the passengers who may dine at his table! He was however a careful master, and in other respects not to be complained of.

What troubled me much more than the bad fare, was the bad company; for the only passenger besides myself was an apparently quite uneducated young man, who passed his time in smoking, whistling, and bawling amongst the sailors, and found his chief recreation in going to see the poultry killed. However, I could at all events congratulate myself on the strength of body and mind that nature had bestowed on me; for the bad food did not injure my health, nor the bad company my spirits. I tried to think only of the joyful moment of landing, and to console myself for the annoyances of the present by hopes for the future.

Nothing remarkable took place on the voyage to the Cape. The beautiful mollusk *Physalis*, which I have noticed in my first Voyage round the World, I now saw in the 35th parallel of north latitude, and the flying fish at 22°. On the 13th of June we sailed quite close to the island of Ferro, in the southern Canary group, passing it at a distance of not more than two miles from the western shore, which consists however of nothing but barren rocks, only here and there scantily covered with vegetation.

It was land, nevertheless, and I gazed fondly at the pleasant and long-desired sight.

June 23*rd.* Many and long as have been my wanderings over the surface of the vast watery waste of ocean, I have never beheld it in such perfect tranquillity as to-day. Not the smallest ripple disturbed its boundless glassy surface. There was something sublime in its profound repose. The next morning we saw two small water-spouts, at about twenty miles off; but as they were to leeward of us we had nothing to fear from them, and were able to observe their movements at our leisure, as they danced along the surface of the sea, and in about a quarter of an hour fell down again into it. The same evening we saw a St. Elmo's fire at the top of our mainmast.

We crossed the equator between twelve and one o'clock in the afternoon of the 4th of July; but no ceremony took place on the occasion, nor did the sailors receive so much as an additional glass of grog. On the 11th of August, after a voyage of seventy-five days, we at last came to anchor in the roads of Cape Town.

Although we had seen no land since the island of Ferro, no very striking impression was made on me by the appearance of the place, perhaps because

that of London was too fresh in my memory, so that Cape Town looked almost like a village. Its situation reminded me of that of Valparaiso, as it is surrounded like that town by a range of treeless and rather barren-looking mountains, of which the Table, Lion, and Devil's Mountains form the principal points. From the deck of the Allandale I could discover only one small tree, although it was the winter of the southern hemisphere, when in the latitude of the Cape hill and valley commonly wear a robe of lovely green. How must it look in summer, when the glowing, almost perpendicular rays of the sun strike it, and scorch up every kind of vegetation?

Captain Brodie left the ship immediately after breakfast, and had not the civility to take me on shore — a piece of courtesy that was never refused me before by any captain I ever sailed with. Even the rough Chinese boatman, who took me from Hong-Kong to Canton, went three miles out of his way to take me to the English factory, and did not leave me till he had found for me the house I was in search of, to which I had introductions. Here I had to land by myself, and make my way as well as I could by enquiry. I had introductions to the Hamburg consul, Mr. Thalwitzer, whom, as well as

his wife, I fortunately found at home; and I received from them so very kind and cordial a reception that I soon forgot the trouble I had had in finding them, and felt myself as much at home as if I had been in my dear native country.

Of Cape Town there is not much to be said. The streets are broad and airy, and in the time of the Dutch almost every street had its beautiful avenue of trees: but few of these are now to be seen. The houses are built quite in the European style, except that they have terraced roofs. The Fort is provided with a great store of cannon, and the barracks are extensive. The Exchange, on the Parade, is a long, low, insignificant-looking building; the private houses all one story high, with from four to six windows in front, and containing lofty handsome rooms. The Botanic Garden is not so rich in flowers, trees, and plants, as might, in such a climate, have been expected. The number of inhabitants in Cape Town is estimated at 32,000; of which one third are whites, one third mulatto, and the remainder negro; but the numerous ramifications and crossings of the European with the native population, have produced, one may say, all kinds of colours. Real unmixed Hottentots or Caffres are rare at Cape Town; but blacks from Mozambique, whom we call negroes,

are very numerous, and of pure descent. Among the mixed races, you often meet with very handsome people, with fine eyes and expressive features; but they are mostly in European dresses, and you only see occasionally a peaked bamboo hat, or, among the unbaptized Malays, a coloured handkerchief twisted round the head, to remind you of where you are.

A few unusual articles of attire of this kind, and the long teams of draught animals harnessed to the waggons, are almost all you see that is new and strange. Waggons that with us would be drawn by two, three, or four horses, here have ten, or from ten to twenty oxen, harnessed two and two. A man or boy walks at the head of a team of this kind to guide it; and on the waggon itself sits the driver, armed with an enormously long whip. Horses are driven only from the box; but when there are six or eight to drive, there are two drivers on the waggon,—one to wield the whip, and the other to guide the cattle. In the market, which is held (every day but Sunday) at an early hour in the morning outside the town, all kinds of provisions are to be found,—fresh and dried fruits, vegetables, poultry, calves, sheep, oxen, dried and smoked meat, &c. Besides provisions there are also hides, sheep-skins, ostrich-feathers,

and other articles for sale, which are disposed of by public auction.

Living is rather dear at Cape Town. Beef, veal, or mutton costs fivepence or sixpence a-pound, flour fourpence, a fowl a shilling, a pound of butter two shillings, and so on; and a house containing six or eight good rooms will cost from eighty to ninety pounds a year. The only cheap article of food is fish, and for the cheapness of this the people have, in some measure, to thank their governor, Lord Somerset. In the year 1825, the butchers presented a petition to him, in which they prayed that a tax might be laid upon fish, the low price of which, they said, did them much damage in their trade. The governor only answered by writing with a pencil on the petition, "When you can show me a single dealer in fish who, like many of you butchers, keeps a carriage and livery servants, your petition shall be taken into consideration."

I passed four weeks in Cape Town, and during which I saw but little deserving of remark. I used at first to ramble freely about the environs, and amuse myself by collecting insects and objects of natural history; but this amusement was soon interrupted by a very unpleasant incident. One morning, while I was taking one of these strolls, and just as I

was rejoicing in the capture of a little snake, two negresses suddenly rushed out upon me from among some trees, seized hold of me, overwhelmed me with abuse, spit on the ground before me, in token of their hatred and contempt, and called me a witch and a sorceress, who ought to be put an end to. There is no saying how this scene might have ended — probably in no very agreeable way for me — had not a man fortunately at that moment made his appearance at a distance. I cried to him for help, and thereupon the two women took to flight.

On my return I mentioned this incident to Mr. Thalwitzer, who instantly sent off notice to a magistrate, and the women were pursued and taken. In the inquiry that took place it appeared to have been their intention to get me by some means into a neighbouring thicket, and there, at all events, to rob me of my clothing, or whatever else they could get.

A child of about ten years old, who had seen the women, and, being frightened at their looks, had hid itself under the boughs of some trees, noticed that one of them was armed with a long knife. On their flight, she had let this knife fall, and the child had afterwards picked it up and brought it to his parents, who carried it to the magistrate. At the examination,

the production of this knife, of course, did not tell in their favour, and they were condemned to four weeks imprisonment "upon rice-water." This, it seems, is an ordinary punishment, and consists in no other nourishment whatever being allowed.

In the present instance this punishment appeared to me rather severe, and I begged for some alleviation of it—but in vain. I was told that these women were notorious offenders, and passed more time in prison than out of it.

In consequence of this occurrence I found it necessary to confine my walks within rather narrower limits than heretofore; but I made one beautiful excursion (for which I have to thank the botanist Mr. Zeeker) to Green Point, Combs Bay, and round the Lion Mountain, whence we had fine views of the sea, the hills, and a very pleasant district. In general, however, the environs of Cape Town are not beautiful; the mountains are for the most part barren, or covered with scanty brushwood, and the plains are wanting in rich grass and corn-fields, their only decoration being an abundance of the most variously coloured wild flowers. These lovely tender children of nature spring up amidst the bushes, in the thin grass, and even force themselves out from beneath the stones. I have lingered for hours among them,

and was always discovering new beauties in them, and finding specimens of kinds I had never seen before.

One favourite walk of the Cape Town people is a small wood which lies at the foot of the Lion Mountain, and is traversed by a pretty footpath. The Governor's garden and the Botanical one are also open to the public. Really beautiful and fertile as a blooming garden are the districts of Rondesbosch, Weinberg, and Constantia — the first lying at four, the two latter at nine and thirteen miles from Cape Town. Many merchants and official persons live at Rondesbosch, and drive to town every morning in omnibuses. Constantia is renowned all the world over for its fine grapes, and I regretted much not being able to see the vines in the season of their glorious adornment. The wine made from these grapes is dark, red, rich, and sweet, and even on the spot very dear.

The Table Mountain, which is 3000 feet high, I ascended one morning quite easily in three hours, and a most magnificent prospect over land and sea rewarded me for the exertion. The summit of this mountain forms an extensive plateau, which has gained for it the name of Table. It has a numerous and lively population of apes, which I heard chat-

tering and screaming, though I could not see them, nor indeed any four-footed animal.

On Friday, the Malay Sunday, I paid a visit to their mosque, a fine lofty hall in the house of the chief priest. The Malays here, though Mohammedans, are not so strict as some of their brethren in the East, and allow strangers to witness their religious service. I found the women, who had put off their upper garments in the apartments of the priest's wife, wrapped in great white shawls and with veils on their heads, which, nevertheless, left their faces uncovered, sitting on the ground at the back of the hall. The men went into an antechamber and pulled off their coloured trowsers, beneath which they had white ones, wrapped themselves in long white robes, and put on a white head-dress over the coloured one that they usually wear. They then prostrated themselves repeatedly, and after that sat down in rows, in the front of which the chief priest took his place and said a prayer. After the first prayer the men kissed the priest's hand, but after the second contented themselves with pressing it. A sort of chorister then began, from somewhere in the back-ground, to sing with the whole strength of his lungs a song or hymn, in which the men all joined in chorus; and

when that was over, he pushed through the crowd to the foot of a little pulpit and roared a second hymn; hereupon the priest ascended the pulpit, and half read half sung a sort of duet with him, consisting of prayers from the Koran, for full two hours, after which the ceremony concluded.

It had been my original intention to stay only a short time in Cape Town, and set off as soon as I could on a journey into the interior of Africa, and penetrate, if possible, as far as the Great Inner Sea. I was assured that, as a woman, I should have little to dread from the natives, and that even the Dutch farmers and vine-growers, people who are not exactly renowned for the courtesy of their manners, would allow me, since I am a German, to go peaceably on my way. Their ill-will was confined, I was told, to the English, whom they try by every possible method to prevent from penetrating far into the country. The war then going on between the English and the Caffres would by no means have hindered me, since I had no occasion to go near the districts where it was raging; but, when I came to make inquiries about the expenses of this journey, I found, alas! that they far exceeded my means, and my fine plan had to be given up. I believe there is no country in the world where travelling is

at the same time so tedious and so expensive as here at the Cape. In the first place, you must purchase a long waggon, covered with linen or matting, and five or six pairs of oxen. This waggon must be fitted up like a house, for it is to serve the purpose of a dwelling and of secure nightly quarters; you must engage a driver, an ox-boy, and a servant, and lay in a stock of provisions, and very often of water also, for the journey. There is a great deal of trouble with these oxen. You often pass through districts infested by a little black fly, whose sting is dangerous, and sometimes fatal to them; in other places there is no water to be had, and the poor animals perish of thirst, or from drinking bad water they fall sick and become unserviceable, so that you have to change them or buy new ones; and oxen become more and more expensive the further you go from the towns, since in the interior they are very scarce. Sometimes the road or path becomes impassable for oxen or waggon, and you must leave both behind and buy horses. Since for these reasons I was compelled to renounce my project of a journey through the centre of Africa, I began to turn my thoughts towards Australia; but it is not always easy to find the opportunity of reaching it from the Cape; but a Bremen brig, the Louisa

Fredericke, was now lying in the harbour bound for Singapore, and at Singapore you may find ships to all the regions of the earth. Through the friendly services of an English government officer, Mr. Hoare, I got the passage of three thousand miles almost for nothing, the master, Captain Wienhaber, charging only for my board, and even for that the merest trifle, namely three pounds.

We sailed on the 25th of August, with a fair wind, and in forty days reached the Straits of Sunda, a rapidity of progress that made less irksome the monotony of the sea, that otherwise would have been very tedious, for we saw during that interval neither ship nor land. In the Sunda Strait it was very different. Ships and steamers were constantly passing us, and land and mountains rising out of the sea on all sides. Java Head, which first attracted our attention, is a richly-wooded mountain of 4000 feet high, connected with ranges of lower mountains and lovely smiling hills. After this we scarcely ever lost sight of land again: large or small islands were continually appearing, huge rocky giants rising from the sea, or groups of trees hanging their branches so low down into the water that they looked as if they were growing in it. We sailed through the Sea of Java, along the coast of Sumatra, and reached the Banca Strait, which is

so hemmed in by the islands of Banca and Sumatra that it often looks like a broad river. On either shore appeared plains, covered with high grass or thick woods, and mountains displaying all the luxuriance of tropical vegetation. The distance from the entrance of the Strait of Sunda to Singapore is not more than seven degrees, but, having to contend with contrary winds and calms, we took fourteen days to it, crossing the equator full half-a-dozen times, and during several nights coming to anchor. The heat was almost intolerable. It rose in the shade to 92½° Fahr.; but the time nevertheless passed pretty quickly. The captain was an educated man, and moreover could play the flute. The natives of the places we passed occasionally paid us visits, bringing with them poultry and fruit, which they exchanged for handkerchiefs, little looking-glasses, or money; and thus kept our table well provided; and the variety of the ever-changing scenery of the shore amused me so much, that I am afraid I can hardly claim any merit for having borne this fourteen days' passage with perfect patience.

We had nevertheless some disagreeable incidents. One morning a sailor, while employed in furling a sail, fell overboard; and on the very same day the same accident happened to the chief mate, while he

was taking soundings. Fortunately there was little or no wind, and both were saved.

One night we were threatened with a still more unpleasant adventure. We were lying at anchor, and since these seas are frequently infested by pirates, the captain had given strict orders to have a vigilant watch kept. We went to bed, but had scarcely got to sleep, when we were startled by the cry from deck, "Two boats in sight from the land!"

Everybody sprang up in a moment. Muskets, ammunition, pistols, and sabres were quickly brought on deck, and distributed among the crew; our two six-pounders, the only guns we carried, were loaded; and in this grand attitude we awaited the foe. But after all, the two boats never came near us, and we were subsequently told that these pirates scarcely ever do attack European ships.

We reached Singapore on the 16th of November, after a fifty-four days' voyage from the Cape, and I was received by the Behn family with the same kindness as when, four years previously, I visited the place for the first time.

In Singapore itself I found nothing altered, but a magnificent lighthouse had been built during that time, about twenty miles off the island, on a rock in the sea, where there is so tremendous a surf that the

guardians of the lighthouse are kept furnished with fresh water and provisions for six months. The tower took eighteen months to build, and is constructed of masses of granite brought from the neighbouring island of Urbin.

It happened, fortunately for me, that a cottage, built just before my arrival, by some families in the country for the sake of enjoying from time to time a better air, just then stood empty; and as Mr. Behn knew that he could afford me no greater pleasure than that of giving me an opportunity of passing a few days in the midst of the jungle, and enjoying to my heart's content the scenery, and the amusement of searching for insects, &c., he placed this cottage at my disposal, and also a boat with five rowers, that I might be able to visit all the little islands around. These five men, who were Malays, used to come every morning to know whether I wanted the boat, and if I did not, they used to attend me in my rambles through the jungle, help me to find insects, &c., and also serve as my protectors against the numerous tigers that swim hither from Malacca across the narrow arm of the sea that divides the peninsula from Singapore. These animals have of late increased tremendously, and do not hesitate to break into the plantations and carry off the

labourers in broad daylight. In the year 1851, it is stated that no less than the almost incredible number of four hundred persons were destroyed by them.

All the horrible stories I was told, however, did not prevent my finding the greatest delight in roaming from morning till evening in these most beautiful woods. My five brown companions were armed with muskets and long and short knives, and from time to time beat the bushes and trees, and uttered precautionary yells, in order to drive away any bad company they might conceal; but I did not feel at all afraid, for I was busy with the beautiful objects that presented themselves to my observation at every step. Here merry little monkeys were springing from bough to bough, there brightly plumed birds flew suddenly out; plants that seemed to have their roots in the trunks of the trees, twined their flowers and blossoms among the branches or peeped out from the thick foliage; and then again the trees themselves excited my admiration by their size, their height, and their wonderful forms. Never shall I forget the happy days I passed in that Singapore jungle, and I herewith send Mr. Behn from afar my acknowledgments for them.

We saw traces of tigers every day; we found the marks of their claws imprinted in the sand or soft earth; and one day at noon, one of these unwelcome guests came quite near to our cottage, and fetched himself a dog, which he devoured quite at his leisure only a few hundred steps off. One night, too, I was startled from my sleep by a noise in the gallery near my bedroom. I did not think the sound I heard proceeded from a fourfooted animal; but as I was situated, I should have thought biped visitors no less formidable; for at no great distance from the place where I was, there was a sort of government station, where from twenty to thirty criminals were kept, and employed in felling timber. They, in all probability, knew very well that my guards slept in a distant hut, that I was quite alone in the cottage, and that the doors were not, and could not be, locked. I took the precaution, indeed, to have always a large knife near me; but that would most likely have availed me but little, had I really tried to make use of it. I thought it best, however, to put a bold face upon the matter, and cried out in a loud voice, "Who's there?"

I received for an answer that a tiger had been seen, and that they were in pursuit of him—which was perfectly possible; but I did not hear a single

shot fired, and the silence of the night was not further disturbed.

The following morning, when a little ape chanced to be playing before the door, and one of my men fired at it, his musket missed fire two or three times running, so that I had reason to congratulate myself that he had not had occasion to use it in earnest in my defence.

The small island of Urbin, not far from Shangae, deserves a visit; for besides the above-mentioned granite, it has a natural curiosity to show which no geologist I think has been able satisfactorily to explain. The masses of rock on the sea-shore—namely, instead of being smoothed and rounded as they usually are when constantly washed over by the tides—are angular, sharp-edged, and split into various compartments. The clefts are from a foot to a foot and a half deep, and the edges stand one or two feet apart.

At Singapore I once more changed the plan of my route, and, instead of going to Adelaide in Australia, determined to proceed to the west-coast of Borneo, and visit Sarawak, the independent territory of the English rajah Brooke. Captain Layell of the Trident (320 tons), was so obliging as to offer to take me for an extremely moderate price.

The distance from Singapore to the town of Sara-

wak is estimated at 450 miles; and we took twelve days to get to Cape Datoo, at the mouth of the river Sarawak, which is here a mile broad. Another half-day we had to lie at anchor in the roads, waiting to enter the river with the flood-tide, after which we had five and twenty miles to sail up the stream. With respect to Sir James Brooke, I find in Keppel's "Expedition to Borneo" that he was born in 1803, and went at an early age as a cadet to India, where he greatly distinguished himself, but was compelled to return to England in consequence of a wound. Subsequently he returned to the service, but his health had suffered so much that he was not able to resume the same active duty, and in 1830 he went from Calcutta to China for change of air and recreation. It was on this voyage that he became acquainted with, and deeply interested in, the Eastern Archipelago. He read all the best works that had been written concerning this part of the world, and soon attained to the conviction that the Eastern Islands, and especially Borneo, offered a rich field for inquiry and enterprise. His principal objects were to abolish the slave-trade; to suppress, or at least check, the piracy, so prevalent here; and to endeavour to humanise the natives. With these objects in view he returned to England, where he had to contend with innumer-

able obstacles before it was possible for him to proceed to the execution of his plan; but in the year 1838, he at length left England in a small but well-fitted war-schooner, with a crew whom during the preceding year he had been carefully training for his undertaking; and, "if ever," says Captain Keppel, "there was a man thoroughly fitted for such an enterprise, it was James Brooke. To distinguished understanding, rapid power of comprehension, great decision of character, and all good qualities of head and heart, he added that of a most pleasant and open demeanour."

On the arrival of Sir James Brooke at Borneo, he found the territories of the Rajah Muda Hassim in a state of complete discord and disorder; but by his help they were in the course of two years restored to perfect tranquillity; and he then directed his attention to the pirates, and succeeded in entirely freeing that part of the coast from their scourge. In gratitude for his assistance Muda Hassim resigned to him the district of Sarawak, and appointed him rajah of it; and in 1841 Sir James Brooke took possession of it, and was acknowledged both by the Sultan of Borneo and the English authorities as its proprietor and prince. The results of his just and energetic government soon showed themselves over

the whole country. The population of the town of Sarawak rose in ten years, from 1,500 to 10,000, and that of the country increased proportionally by numerous emigrations from the surrounding territories. Even the wild, free Dyaks know his name, and honour him as the liberater of their countrymen, who formerly lived as slaves under the yoke of the Malays, but whom Rajah Brooke has now placed on a footing of equality with them. Every one can in his dominions enjoy in peace the fruits of his industry; the trader may devote his attention entirely to his business; the peasant may have for nothing as much land as he can till, and moreover as much rice as will serve for seed, and for his support till the next harvest-time. The labourer can find employment in the gold, diamond, and antimony mines. The taxes are extremely trifling: the tradesman pays a mere trifle on his shop, the peasant a picul (125 pounds) of rice, and the labourer nothing at all. The chief revenue of the Rajah, besides that from the antimony mines, is derived from the cultivation of opium, which forms the great source of profit for the governments, not only here but throughout India. I shall have occasion subsequently to speak further of this monopoly. The Malays do not smoke much, so that at Sarawak, as

everywhere else, the Chinese are the great customers for it.

I regretted exceedingly that I had not an opportunity of becoming personally acquainted with Sir James Brooke, as, at the time of my arrival, he was absent; but his place was filled temporarily by Captain John Brooke, whom he has adopted as a son and heir of his title and domains. Scarcely had Captain Brooke heard that I was on board the "Trident," than he sent down his own convenient proa, under the command of Captain Grimbel, to shorten for me the passage of the river, which for ships is often very tedious. The "Trident" had, indeed, I afterwards learned, full three days' work to get up, whilst I had reached the town in four hours. A *proa*, I may mention, is a boat, of from twenty to eighty feet long, and from six to eight broad, which draws very little water. These boats are frequently made use of by the pirates, as they can run with them into the mouth of any river, and easily escape from pursuit.

The banks of the river Sarawak are low, and in many places overflowed, so as to form a series of morasses. The first ten or twelve miles from the sea are covered on both sides with nipa and mangrove palms, both which are of incalculable utility.

They have no trunks, but the leaves, which are from twelve to fifteen feet long, shoot up directly from the root. Every part of the plant is serviceable. The walls of huts are built with the ribs of the leaves, and the leaves themselves form the roof, or they are burnt to ashes for the sake of a salt obtained from them. Mats and baskets are woven from the fibres; and from a juice obtained by boiling the leaves, a kind of syrup is made.

Nearer to the town the banks rise higher, and the country becomes hilly, while in the distance appear ranges of mountains, amongst which are the Matang and Santaborg, 3000 feet high. One feature of the country appeared to me peculiar, namely, that of steep mountains, rising to a height of several thousand feet, and with peaked tops, which seemed to have no connection with any other mountain or hill, but stood quite free in the middle of a plain.

The population, both on the sea-coast and the banks of the river, is extremely scanty; indeed, until I came within about eight miles of the town, I saw only a single house, which was about a hundred feet long, and stood on piles twenty feet high, near the mouth of the river. It was inhabited by Dyaks. After this there is no appearance of human habitation.

In former times the coast was uninhabited for a distance of twenty or thirty miles inland, for the dread of pirates was such that no one ventured to build a hut within their reach. Since the arrival of Rajah Brooke, however, as I have said, the west and north coasts are entirely free from these ferocious invaders.

I was received at the landing-place of Sarawak by Captain Brooke in person, and he accompanied me to his uncle's house. When I presented my letter of introduction he was so kind as to assure me that my name was so well known to him that any other introduction was unnecessary.

The town of Sarawak has neither streets nor squares; but consists of a throng of huts, crowded together without any order or symmetry. They are constructed out of the nipa palm, and stand on piles eight or ten feet high,—a mode of building that is said to be imitated from the Chinese. The entrance is by a ladder, the rungs of which are so wide apart that, for an unpractised climber, it is somewhat dangerous to attempt to get in. Still more dangerous, however, is the floor of the house itself when you have got in, as it consists only of coarsely plaited network of thin smooth bamboo canes, very slippery, and in the interstices of which your feet are continually

catching. Proceeding to the interior parts of the house, you find the grating somewhat closer, and generally covered with matting. Of furniture there is of course little enough,—some wooden boxes and baskets, a few straw mats and cushions, some earthen vessels for cooking, a gong, a *parang* (a knife a foot and a half long), and some *clambus*. These are a kind of canopy, with cambric muslin curtains that hang down to the ground. They are about five feet high and as many broad, and are used to form separate sleeping-apartments for grown girls and unmarried people, as well as for a protection against mosquitoes. They are very light, and can be put up anywhere. The lower space in the hut, beneath the grated floor, is used as a dwelling-place for fowls, dogs, and other animals. Among the Chinese inhabitants it is usually populous with pigs, and is a real dunghill, from which every kind of dirt is thrown up through the grated floor.

The population of Sarawak consists of Malays and Chinese; for the few Dyaks you see form no families; they are mostly either in service, or they have come here on business. The Chinese and Malays inhabit separate quarters of the town, and the former depart in nothing from the habits of life and costume of their native country, though they are

compelled to one change, namely, that of seeking for wives among the Malays or Dyaks, as the Chinese government does not permit their women to emigrate; and a Chinese woman, who should disregard the prohibition, would forfeit any property she might possess, and would never be allowed to return. Most of the Chinese in Borneo take wives from among the Dyaks, as the Dyak women are much more industrious than the Malays, and have the advantage of not professing any religion, so that they easily accommodate themselves to their husbands in this respect — or rather, do not seem conscious of the necessity of any accommodation.

The Chinese population may be regarded both as a benefit and an injury to a country in which they settle. On the one hand, they are industrious and persevering in all that they undertake; but, at the same time, they are in the highest degree covetous, artful, and untrustworthy. In Sarawak they have got all the commerce, as well as the business of the mines, and the greater part of the mechanical trades, into their hands. They get all the profit away from the idle Malays, as well as overreach and defraud the more simple and honest Dyaks in every possible way. The Malays are Mahomedans, but vary in many of their customs from their Oriental fellow-

believers. They allow, for instance, much freedom to their women, who may go freely in and out, and not only wear no veils, but go clothed in almost too airy a manner. Most of them wear only one garment — the *sarang*, — a large piece of stuff, which is wrapped round them, fastened above or below the breast, and descends to the feet. Some eke out this rather scanty costume with a kind of short jacket (*cabay*), or a longer upper garment, called a *padjee*. The wives of persons of the higher class seldom go out; but this is merely from indolence, and is not to be attributed to prohibition, for they may receive any visitors at home.

The costume of the men differs very little from that of the women. Like them they wear the sarang and the cabay, and sometimes even the padjee. The short trowsers they wear are covered by the sarang, and at the first glance it would often be impossible to distinguish the sexes, did not the men twist a handkerchief round their heads, while the women wear their hair uncovered.

Marriages are made here without any great ceremony, and very easily unmade. Each party may separate when it pleases him or her; and you meet with many, both men and women, who have changed their "better halves" at least half a dozen times.

The female sex is not here remarkable for beauty of any kind, but the figures of the women are better than their faces. They have projecting cheek-bones, great mouths, with black teeth, and long hanging under lips; so that it will be admitted, I think, that they cannot be called handsome, notwithstanding the brilliant jetty polish conferred on the said teeth by antimony and other kinds of blacking — regarded by the Malays as a great charm. Some of the more dressy ladies file them half away, or cut them to sharp points. The frightful extension of the lower lip is occasioned by the *siri* which they chew, and usually stick between the lower teeth and lip. Their noses are flat, and the nostrils broad; their figures are usually of the middle size, and less slender than those of the men; their complexions reddish brown, of a lighter or darker shade; their hair and eyes black. Their hands and feet are small, but thin and bony.

They begin to chew this *siri* at the age of eight or ten years. It consists of a thin betel leaf, with a piece of areca nut, with a little burnt chalk and gambir, wrapped in it. Before putting this little packet into their mouths they rub the teeth and lips in a disgusting manner with tobacco, and presently the saliva and the whole mouth becomes of blood red. This

horrid custom is so much in favour that old people, who have not teeth enough to chew the siri, carry about with them a little tube in which to pound it.

The country round Sarawak is very pretty, and rendered prettier by a few European houses that are scattered about on the hills around, where are also a small fort, a neat church and mission house, and a court of justice. All these edifices—Rajah Brooke's residence not excepted—are built of wood.

The mission house contains, besides a school for the natives, one for twenty-four children, mostly whites, who are entirely provided for. The little fort, though it does possess a few guns, has no garrison, for Rajah Brooke is too much beloved and respected, not only by his own subjects, but by all neighbouring people, for him to have any need of arms.

I visited the houses of some of the most distinguished Malays, who were once formidable pirate chiefs, but have been transformed into peaceful citizens, and, in some instances indeed, into useful servants of the Rajah's government.

The dwellings of these wealthy Malays consist, like those of their poorer brethren, in one room only, but much larger, often not less than fifty feet long, and broad in proportion; these contain,

besides the chambers, some other little divisions made with partitions of leaves. Handsome mats and carpets too are found in them; but the chief riches consist in gongs, weapons, and *balangas*. The latter are large earthen vessels of a vase-like shape, from two to four feet high, adorned with arabesques, but still not looking as if they were of any value. I should have taken no notice of them, or regarded them merely as intended to hold water, had they not been specially pointed out to my attention; and I was very much surprised when I was told that they are worth from a hundred to several thousand rupees each (a rupee is about two shillings). I almost thought there must have been some exaggeration in this statement, but I was assured that the possessor of one of these vases, if he had need of money, could always easily procure it, for any one would advance him either a part or the whole of the worth of this mysteriously valuable property.

What is still more curious, is that no one knows either where they come from or for what use they were intended. It is conjectured that they have been brought from China, and the Chinese of the present day make the most exact imitations of them, but a connoisseur will nevertheless know the real from the imitation at a glance.

Since I had a wish to become acquainted with the Dyak inhabitants, Captain Brooke had the goodness to propose to me an excursion to one of their settlements, though he warned me I must be a good climber for such an undertaking, as the Dyaks do not like living in plains, but build their huts on the points of rocks, the higher and more inaccessible the better. In former times they probably did this for the sake of security, and now under the tranquil government of Rajah Brooke they continue to do so from habit.

The object of our present excursion was the mountain Sarambo, about 1500 feet high, upon which some eighty families have taken up their abode under a chief. We set out on our little journey on the 20th of December, at 11 o'clock at night, in a boat on the river Sarawak. The night was very dark, and threatened rain, but neither rain nor darkness was likely to occasion us any damage. The proa was well decked, brightly lighted, and divided by curtains into various apartments, in one of which a soft couch under a mosquito-net was made ready for me. The tide was in our favour, and when I awoke on the following morning, we were just landing at a Chinese settlement consisting of two rows of huts, forming a little street. I saw

here that the Chinese have no more objection to dirt than the Malays; the only difference is that the Malay puts his house upon piles, and lives over the filth, and the Chinese keeps it before his door.

Captain Brooke had sent servants, provisions, and cooking utensils on before us, so that we very soon had a most excellent meal. The company consisted of two Europeans besides Captain Brooke and myself. After breakfast, the pedestrian journey began, and a merry troop of Dyaks, to whom our coming had been made known the day before, surrounded our party, every one begging to carry something in order to earn a little tobacco. We had about twenty in our suite, some of them carrying nothing more than a little saucepan; but they received not the less from Captain Brooke, — a handsome allowance of tobacco and of the copper coins that he was distributing among their companions. The path led round the foot of the mountain through broad well-cultivated rice plantations, above which, rugged and abrupt, the mountain itself rose out of the plain.

I had heard much of the bad roads in Borneo, but I was really astonished nevertheless when I saw the path — absolutely perilous to life — that led to the summit. Pools, marshes, brooks, and chasms, were to be crossed by means of two bamboo sticks,

or the thin round trunk of a young tree; and to climb up almost perpendicular cliffs, there was no other help than one of these thin stems, in which a few notches were made for the foot to rest in, to steady you for a moment. At the most dangerous places there was indeed a sort of hand-rail, but of such fragile construction that a fall would have been inevitable had one leaned upon it in earnest; so that I was obliged to keep my eyes constantly fixed upon the path I had to tread, and could not give the smallest attention to the beauty of the surrounding scenery. Only when from time to time we came to a halting place, did I find leisure to contemplate with admiration the rich luxuriance of the woods we were traversing, and the superb climbing plants and orchidaceæ. The palms, and especially the Sago species, are of larger size in Borneo than I have ever seen anywhere else; but its wealth of flowers and birds is not equal to that of Singapore. I was told, indeed, that this was not the flower season, but I remained six months in Borneo without finding reason to alter my opinion.

At a height of 1200 feet we came to the first Dyak habitation, a great hut fifty feet long and about as much broad, the entire furniture of which consisted in a number of sleeping places ranged round the walls. It is, it seems, a custom among the Dyaks

for the young men of a tribe to sleep all in the same dormitory, under the superintendence of a chief, and at some hundred paces from the parents' village. These huts serve at the same time for a place of rendezvous for feasts, and for the preservation of war-trophies, which consist of the heads of their slain enemies. I could not look without horror at a row of no less than six and thirty of these agreeable memorials hung up in ornamental style like a garland of flowers, and with the sockets of the eyes filled with white oval shells.

Rajah Brooke has put an end to this practice of cutting off heads in the district of Sarawak, but the natives still look fondly at their old skulls, the memorials of a sanguinary past time, and doubtless to them associated with the recollection of what they regard as deeds of glory, very much as the tattered flags that we hang up in our public buildings are to us.

We continued our wanderings till we came to the neighbouring village, which consisted of two great huts, each more than 150 feet long, built on piles, and standing opposite one another. The mode of entrance was by notched trunks of trees, placed against them like ladders, and always drawn up at night. Each hut had a spacious covered hall or vestibule, with doors all round, leading to the

chambers of the several families, most of which have one and sometimes two little rooms to themselves. These contain places adapted for sleeping and cooking, and serve to stow away the little household utensils; but the large hall is the actual dwelling-place. Here they carry on their various occupations, here the children tumble about, and here the aged people rest. There is, indeed, quite the appearance of what we may call domestic life among these Dyaks. The women work at plaiting mats and baskets, and the men cut very pretty little boxes for tobacco or siri, as well as handsome handles for parangs.

There are fireplaces in this hall as well as in the private chambers, but they seem used rather for lighting that cooking. A few years ago the fresh human heads used to be hung up over them to dry and smoke, after which they were carried in great state to the place of honour in the hut of the chief. The Dyaks, like the Malays, are in the habit of residing over a puddle or dunghill, in which pigs, dogs, and fowls rout about as it pleases them; and it is difficult to imagine, in looking at these filthy holes, how the people living over them can ever be free from fever. But I heard nothing of it, though I saw many signs of cutaneous disease and tumours among them. From the latter the men appear to suffer

much more than the women; but with these exceptions I could not find that they were subject to malady.

These Dyaks are not more highly endowed in the matter of personal beauty than the Malays; they have flat noses, very broad nostrils, immense mouths, pale thick lips, and projecting jaws. They also beautify their teeth in the same manner as the Malays by filing them to a sharp point and staining them black. The expression of their ugly faces is nevertheless serene and good-tempered, but mostly, it must be owned, somewhat stupid, probably, in a great measure, from a prevalent fashion of keeping the mouth open. Their colour is light brown, their eyes and hair black; the men wear it short, but with the women it hangs down long, lank, and unplaited. The deportment of the ladies is certainly unpleasant, as they walk with their feet wide apart, and their stomachs as much stuck out as possible. This not very elegant carriage appears to me to be peculiar to women of the Malay race; at least, I have often noticed it among them, and not among any others.

The costume of the Dyaks must be admitted to have the merit of simplicity, for a gentleman's entire wardrobe often consists of a strip of bast of about a

hand's breadth passed round his middle, and sometimes, but not often, a similar strip round his head; but he adorns himself nevertheless with as many glass beads and brass rings as he can hang about him. The men have many more of these decorations than the women; indeed, I rather think the wearing glass beads is a privilege of the superior sex, for I very seldom saw a lady in possession of one. The long broad knife called a parang is always worn by the men at one side, and a small pretty basket containing the ingredients of siri at the other.

The Dyak women wear a scanty petticoat reaching from the loins to the ankle, and round their waists several brass bands, or bamboo canes stained black, and forming a girdle of from two to eight inches broad according to the opulence of the wearer. The girls put on these girdles when they emerge from the period of childhood, which in this country is usually in their tenth year. They are worn very tight, and weigh fifteen pounds, and they are only afterwards laid aside when the wearer is about shortly to become a mother. Some have the arm from the wrist to the elbow covered with brass rings, and holes in the cartilage of their ears large enough for a piece of wood an inch in diameter to pass through. Tattooing

is not fashionable, but feet, nails, and finger-tips, are worn of a red-brown colour.

We passed the remainder of the day and night among these people. In the evening Captain Brooke entertained them with brandy, of which they are very fond,—and then requested them to favour us, in return, with a dance. They did not seem much inclined to comply with this request, and took a great deal of pressing; however, they stood up at last, and began. The dance they performed was a very quiet and sedate one, and gave, like the Hindoo dances, more occupation for the hands and arms than for the feet. It may be performed either by a man alone, or by a man and woman, as in this instance; and the woman made the same movements as the man, but kept her eyes so constantly fixed on the ground, that they appeared to be closed. None of the dancers continued the exercise long, but were soon relieved by other performers of a *pas seul* or *pas de deux*, as might be, to the tuneful accompaniment of an orchestra consisting of two drums and a gong.

During this entertainment the Dyaks who did not dance sat perfectly still,—indeed motionless,—with a certain tranquil seriousness in their faces that appears to characterise them. Nowhere have I

been so little tormented by impertinent curiosity as among these people.

On the following morning we resumed our journey; and if I had found the ascent of the mountains difficult, it may be supposed the descent was not less so, especially as heavy rain had fallen in the night, and made the paths soft and slippery. I soon found it absolutely necessary to pull off my shoes, and go barefoot over stock and stone, through thorns and thistles, and thus continue my pilgrimage down into the valley.

At Simawan we again breakfasted, and then, entering the boat, rowed five miles further up the river Sarawak; then landed again, and walked three miles up a narrow valley, where we found ourselves in the midst of the antimony mines.

Mine, indeed, is not the word; for the ore lies in such abundance on the very surface of the ground, that no mining is required. The ground merely has to be broken with pickaxe and hammer, and the pieces of ore packed into baskets, and carried down to the river. One of the Chinese labourers here will carry, by means of a pole, with a basket at each end, a weight of two *piculs* (250 pounds), and run with the burden, moreover, at a pretty quick

rate. The ore is said to yield ninety per cent. of antimony.

From these antimony mines, or rather beds, we went to a summer residence of Rajah Brooke, to which is attached a small farm, where some dozens of cows are kept, and milk and butter made daily, which is sent to the Rajah's kitchen.

Cows and horses are found in Borneo only among Europeans; the former degenerate very rapidly, and give little milk, and their calves die in great numbers; horses, also, do not live so long as in their native countries, and do not continue the species; but, to make amends for the scarcity of more familiar animals, I saw at Rajah Brooke's a grand specimen of the nose-ape, two of the largest orang-outangs, and a honey-bear, an animal found only in Borneo.

On the 24th of December we returned to Sarawak.

CHAP. III.

DEPARTURE FROM SARAWAK.—COMPELLED RETURN.—JOURNEY TO SCARAN.—THE INDEPENDENT DYAKS.—HUMAN HEADS.—JOURNEY ALONG THE LUPPA.—NIGHT OF HORROR.—ENCOUNTER WITH A TRIBE AT WAR.—CROSSING THE SCHÄMEL MOUNTAIN.—CEREMONIOUS RECEPTION BY THE SULTAN OF SINTANG.

When I had nothing more to see in Sarawak I wished to continue my journey. My plan was to go by sea to the river Scaran, and then to follow its course inland as far as the range of mountains called the Schämel, which forms the water-shed of the streams running east and west; then to cross these mountains, ship myself again on the waters flowing westward, and so by a great circuit reach Poutianah, a Dutch settlement on the west coast of Borneo. Captain Brooke took a great deal of pains to dissuade me from this undertaking; he assured me that the interior of the country was full of wild, mostly independent tribes of Dyaks, and that he himself, as

a man, would hesitate to attempt such a journey. I did not, however, allow myself to be frightened, but remained steady to my resolution; and, though I did not take his advice, Captain Brooke had the kindness to order his gun-boat, under command of Captain Grimble, to be got ready to take me to Sambas, at the mouth of the river Scaran, and a proa to carry me thence up the river to the fort of the same name.

The preparation of the boat, and still more the bad weather, detained me ten days in Sarawak, but they were passed very agreeably; and, on the 31st of December, Captain Brooke invited all the Europeans to a dinner, at which there was of course no deficiency of toasts. The first was, as usual, the Queen; the second, the absent Rajah; I was honoured with the third; and for the fourth I begged to propose the gentlemen present; and thus gaily we saw together the entrance of the new year. On the 1st of January the weather brightened up, the sun again looked kindly down upon us, and Captain Brooke sent for all the children from the mission house, and gave them a merry new year's day.

The children ran and romped about in the garden, and the natives amused themselves with rowing

matches on the river, at the conclusion of which Captain Brooke made presents to the visitors.

On the 5th of January, 1852, I set forth in the company of a missionary, who proposed establishing himself at Scaran, to prosecute my journey. We got down the river in safety, but found the sea so rough and stormy that it was impossible to make any way. One heavy sea that struck us carried away our bowsprit, and another washed the caboose (kitchen) and the entire dinner that was just got ready there overboard. After this it was resolved to give it up for the present, and the next day we were again at anchor before Sarawak.

Captain Brooke told me I ought to regard these difficulties as a warning, and give up my plan; but I replied, that, though a woman and an old one, I did not allow myself to be troubled by omens.

Gales of wind and heavy rains continued for several days. No one could recollect such a continuance of bad weather, at least for a very long period; but the Malays accounted for it to their satisfaction by an eclipse of the moon that took place on the 8th.

Under these circumstances the voyage in the gunboat was considered impracticable. If I would go, I was told I should have to venture it in the proa, in which I could keep close in shore, and run into

every river. I accepted the offer, and the proa was accordingly prepared. On the 11th I embarked once more, and in the midst of a deluge of rain. Captain Brooke had given me a Malay guide; but the missionary staid behind, being *afraid of sea-sickness!* Captain Grimble tried to insist on accompanying me, but this I would not allow.

We found the sea still in very bad humour; and it sent wave after wave over us, so that the proa was soon half full of water; but after a struggle of some hours we got as far as a small river, into which we retreated for the night. The next day the weather had somewhat improved, and on the third we gained the mouth of the Scaran. Here both wind and tide were in our favour, and we did the sixty-nine miles to the fort in nine hours.

Commandant Lee received me with all possible courtesy in this wooden fort, which Rajah Brooke had had built shortly before, as the frontier of his dominions. It is surrounded by low earthen walls, and manned by a garrison of about thirty native soldiers, but Mr. Lee and another officer are the only Europeans.

The river Scaran is a rather more considerable one than the Sarawak, but divides itself thirty miles from the mouth into two arms, upon the smaller of which,

called the Luppa, the fort is situated. The banks are variously covered with nipa-palms, trees of rich foliage, jungle-grass, and plantations of rice. The waters of the Scaran, like those of the Sarawak, are continually encroaching on the land; indeed with most of the rivers of Borneo the banks are so low that they stand under water for miles.

Mr. Lee had been forewarned of my arrival, and had communicated the intelligence to the natives, so that they came flocking from all sides to see me, for such an astonishing spectacle as a white woman had never yet been witnessed in their country. From morning till night, therefore, I had to present myself to be gazed at; but I must do my visitors, both Malays and Dyaks, the justice to say that they behaved with much modesty and discretion, and their curiosity was not at all troublesome. They merely held out their hands to me, and then sat down and stared at me in silence. Some of the Dyak women had on a sort of short garment when they came in, but they coolly took it off in the room, and laid it down.

The next day I again had visitors; but as I found that the Malays here were in every respect precisely like those of Sarawak, I did not allow them to detain me long, but preferred paying a visit to one of the

independent tribes of Dyaks in the neighbourhood of Scaran.

Here I found a great hut, at least 200 feet long, and such a quantity of goods spread out, that I should have taken these Dyaks for traders, if there were any traders among them. There were cotton cloths, and stuffs made of bast; superb mats; beautifully plaited baskets; the costly vases, the value set on which had so much perplexed me; parangs, drums, gongs, all kinds of treasures, in short, displayed; and an immense quantity of prepared bamboos and nipa-palms: not forgetting a goodly store of sacks of rice and other provisions.

I saw also among these Dyaks a great deal more finery than among those I had seen on the Sarambo mountains. Many of the men were literally loaded with it. Their throats and breasts were entirely covered with glass beads, shells, and the teeth of the honey bear. Their arms up to the elbow, their legs to the calf, were encircled with brass bands; some wore a sort of armlet elaborately cut out of a white shell, which is regarded as of great value among them; but the most precious ornaments of all are necklaces and bracelets of human teeth.

Their ears were pierced, and adorned sometimes with as many as fifteen rings, each increasing in size

till the largest reached three inches in diameter, and hung down on the shoulder, with a leaf, a flower, or some other little ornament fastened to it. Many wore on their heads small red caps decorated with beads and shells, brass plates, or lofty plumes of the beautiful argus bird; others had a piece of bast stuff rolled round their heads, with the ends stuck up and spread out to look like feathers as much as possible; but the gentlemen whose heads were thus elaborately full-dressed wore nothing whatever on the rest of their persons, so that the effect on the whole was somewhat singular.

The women, as usual, were by no means so fine: they had no earrings, no bears' teeth, and very few beads; but their girdles were nine inches broad, and adorned with an immense number of shining brass and leaden rings. I lifted up one of these ornaments, and I certainly do not think I exaggerate when I say it weighed twenty pounds.

Mr. Lee requested the chief to let the sword dance be performed; and accordingly two parangs were laid crosswise upon the ground, and two gaily decorated young warriors presented themselves as dancers. They had narrow red scarfs with gold borders twisted round their heads, and a long coloured piece of stuff thrown over their shoulders. The dance

was very graceful and decorous, and gave employment to feet as well as hands and arms; the performers threw themselves into fine attitudes, and executed very skilful movements. First they danced for a few minutes round the swords, appearing as if desirous of lifting them up, but, whenever they moved forward to take them, sprang back as if seized with sudden horror, until they at length really seized them, and manœuvred them in the most masterly manner, like well practised fencers. It was certainly the finest dance I had ever seen performed by savages. The accompanying instruments were, as usual, two drums and a gong.

On the same day I paid a visit to another tribe further on, and found little difference from what I had observed among the first, except that I had the pleasure here of seeing a pair of handsome war trophies in two freshly cut off human heads.

These trophies had not indeed been wanting among the other tribe, but they had been dried, and made into mere skulls. These, on the contrary, had only been taken a few days before, and had a horrible appearance. They were blackened by smoke, the flesh only half dried, the skin unconsumed, lips and ears shrivelled together, the former standing wide apart, so as to display the teeth in all their

hideousness. The heads were still covered with hair; and one had even the eyes open, though drawn far back into their sockets. The Dyaks took these heads out of the baskets in which they were hanging, in order to exhibit them to me with great complacency. It was a sight that I shall not easily forget!

As they took these heads in their hands to show them to me, they spat in the dead faces; and the boys struck them and spat on the ground, while their usually quiet and peaceful physiognomies assumed an extremely savage expression. I shuddered, but could not help asking myself whether, after all, we Europeans are not really just as bad or worse than these despised savages? Is not every page of our history filled with horrid deeds of treachery and murder? What shall we say to the religious wars of Germany and France?—to the conquest of America—to the deeds of violence and blood in the middle ages—to the Spanish Inquisition?

And even if we come to more modern times, in which we are outwardly more refined, are we at bottom more mild and merciful to our enemies? Not merely a wretched hut among the wild and ignorant Dyaks, but spacious halls and vast palaces might be decorated by many a European sovereign with the heads that have fallen a sacrifice to his

selfish ambition. Would not the wars of Napoleon furnish millions? Since the beginning of the world how many wars have there not been, which might be attributed to the greediness and lust of dominion generally of a single individual? And if we add to the thousands and tens of thousands who have, even in the most recent times, been destroyed in war, the numbers, still more pitiable, who have perished slowly in dungeons, or who have fallen victims to unhealthy climates, or any of the other incalculable miseries that war brings in its train, I do not think we Europeans can venture to say much about the cruelty of these ignorant savages, who kill their enemies (as we do), but do not torture them, and, for what they do, may plead in excuse that they are without the light of religion or of intellectual culture. Can we with a very clear conscience preach to them upon the subject of mildness, mercy, and aversion to bloodshed?

In some books of travels I have read that the Dyaks are in the habit of laying human heads at the feet of the objects of their affections, by way of love-token; but the Dutch traveller, Temmink, contradicts this, and I believe he is right, for human heads are not always so easy to get. A young gentleman who might wish to pay his lady-love so

pretty a compliment, would often be greatly perplexed how to come by one, as a head is what an enemy cannot in general be very readily induced to part with.

I rather think this unpleasant custom of head-hunting originates in some kind of superstition; for when, for instance, a rajah falls sick, or goes on a journey, it is common for him to vow a head to his tribe in case of recovery or of safe return. Should he die, one or two heads are usually offered by the tribe as a kind of sacrifice; and in the same manner, when a treaty of peace is concluded between two tribes, a man is sometimes given up on each side to be beheaded, though it is rather more customary to make a pig answer the purpose.

When a head has once been vowed, it has to be procured at any sacrifice, and the Dyaks then go and lie in wait for an opportunity to get one. They hide themselves in the jungle grass, which is from three to six feet high, or among trees, or leafy branches that have been cut off, and lie watching for their victim; and then the first human creature that approaches, man, woman, or child, is sacrificed. They first shoot a poisoned arrow from their ambush, and then spring like tigers upon their prey. With a single blow they separate the head from the body, cutting it off quite close and smooth, with a dexterity

that shows considerable practice; they then carefully conceal the body, and put the head into a basket kept expressly for this purpose, and decorated with human hair. A murder of this kind always occasions a war; for the tribe, a member of which has been thus killed, immediately takes the field, and does not rest until it has obtained one or two heads as damages; and these are then brought home in triumph, with dances and songs, and solemnly placed among other treasures of the same kind. The rejoicings and feastings that follow last a whole month.

The Dyaks are so very fond of heads that when, as sometimes happens, they undertake a feud or a piratical expedition, in company with the Malays, they only stipulate for these fancy articles as their share of the booty, and willingly resign all the rest to their more covetous allies.

The women and children generally go with them on such expeditions; but they are never undertaken till the rice-harvest is over, as that is of too much importance to be neglected, even for a head-hunt.

I regretted not to have come a week sooner, for I should then have witnessed the ceremonies accompanying the conclusion of a peace between two independent and hitherto hostile tribes, whom the zealous

endeavours of Rajah Brooke had at length succeeded in reconciling. Mr. Lee informed me that the two chiefs, or rajahs, came to the appointed spot, accompanied by twenty or thirty of their people. Each party brought a pig, and, after long speeches on both sides, the heads of the animals were cut off,—not, however, by Dyaks, but by Malays. If the head falls at one blow, it is considered lucky; and these pigs are not eaten, but thrown into the river. The treaty is made, not according to years, for this mode of reckoning is unknown to them, but for so many rice-harvests.

Mr. Lee, like Captain Brooke, endeavoured to dissuade me from my purpose of penetrating into the interior of the country. Information had reached him, he said, that a chief of a tribe had been lately killed there, and that, in consequence, the whole district was involved in war. I was determined to go as far as I could, however, notwithstanding this kind solicitude for my safety, and I embarked accordingly on the 22nd of *January* upon the Luppa, with the intention of going up the stream as far as the Schämel mountains. I had with me the servant given me by Captain Brooke, eight Malay boatmen, and Mr. Lee's cook, whom he was good enough to send with me as steersman, and who was of the greatest use, as he

spoke some words of English, as well as the language of the country.

On leaving the fort, we entered immediately the territory of the free Dyaks, and, indeed, of some who are considered particularly fierce. Early in the afternoon we arrived at one of their settlements, and I stopped and determined to pass the night there; and, as I always made it a practice to do, approached them with the utmost kindness and cordiality, shook hands with both men and women, sat down in the midst of them, took the children on my lap, and so forth. After this, I set off on a ramble into the forest, in which, I need hardly say, I was accompanied by the whole troop of natives, with all their children.

They wanted to see where I was going to, what I wanted with the butterflies, &c., what was the use of the box in which I preserved them, and which I always carried with me; in short, they contemplated my doings with full as much curiosity as I did theirs.

At first they laughed at me amazingly when they saw me running after all sorts of "small deer;" but I had no sooner made them understand that these insects were useful in the preparation of medicines than the laughers became diligent assistants in the

search, and I have them to thank for many valuable specimens. That savages should laugh at things of this kind was of course to be expected; but I did not suppose I should have had the same ignorant ridicule to encounter in several of the so-called civilised European colonies, and even in the United States of America. Sometimes those ladies and gentlemen carried their merriment so far that I could not help asking whether any of them had ever seen a museum; and if they had, whether they supposed the insects had needed to be caught, or had betaken themselves there of their own accord, out of zeal for science.

With the evening twilight we returned from our ramble, and I found a place prepared for me and spread with nice clean mats. The people sat down near me, it is true, but they did not touch a thing belonging to me. They even showed so much respect for my property as to go away from the place when I left it, and I was able to leave all my things lying about without the least fear. When I was eating, also, they went a little further from me, in order not to put any constraint upon me. They entertained me with a kind of curry of fowls and rice,—the latter, alas! strongly flavoured with rancid cocoa-nut oil; but, as I had tasted nothing whatever

the whole day, hunger compelled me to eat some of it, though I was obliged to stop my nostrils and get through the meal as fast as I possibly could.

The Dyaks remained late up in the evening, but at eleven o'clock their fires were extinguished, and then thick darkness surrounded me. I was quite alone with them, cut off from all human help, among these enthusiastic head collectors; but I did not feel at all afraid, for I knew that Rajah Brooke's name had penetrated thus far, and that I could rest in safety under the shelter of the esteem and respect it inspired.

January 23rd. Nothing particular occurred during the following day. We passed in the morning several Dyak settlements, without the slightest disturbance, and in the afternoon again made a halt with one of the tribes. Here things did not just now look very comfortable, for the tribe had only returned two days before from the wars, and had brought with them a head, which was hung up, along with two others nearly dry, over the fireplace and close to my bed. This was because the place nearest these valued trophies is the place of honour, and always to be offered to a distinguished guest; so my refusing it was out of the question. My situation, however, became a very painful one. The

wind rushing through the hut rattled the dry skulls continually one against another, and the vapour and stench from the fresh head was suffocating, and from time to time driven by the wind right into my face. The people, too, appeared to be in a strangely excited state, and, long after the fires had been put out, kept moving about my bed in the dark. Sleep was impossible, and I got by degrees into a perfect fever of terror; I could not remain lying down, and yet I did not dare to leave my bed. I sat up, therefore, and remained sitting, and expecting, I own, every moment to feel the knife at my throat, until at length the morning dawned, and I sank back completely exhausted on my couch.

Travelling in Borneo is a very slow operation. In the lovely early mornings it is impossible to induce the boatmen to set off, for they insist on first cooking their rice, and for this they take as much time as a professed cook would among us to prepare a grand dinner. When they have set off too, they are continually laying down their oars, now to prepare siri, and then to make straw cigars and smoke them; so that on an average more than half of the people are never at work. I do not think I ever had my patience more severely tried than during this journey; and the Malay attendant whom Captain Brooke had

given me, and who he thought would have been of the greatest service to me, was the most intolerable of all. Probably his behaviour would have been very different to a master from what it was to a woman, whom he considered entirely dependent on him.

His business was to act as my personal attendant, and at the same time to keep the other people to their duty, and get them off betimes in the morning. But he did nothing of the kind. The men might dawdle till twelve o'clock if they liked, and for his part he remained quietly in his bed, or, if he got up, loitered about smoking and gossiping, and getting himself waited upon, instead of waiting upon me. If I told him to do anything he made me no answer, or even turned his back upon me, so that when I could not do without assistance I was obliged to ask that of the boatmen.

The scenery of the country we were passing through now became more lovely with every stroke of the oar. The morasses had disappeared, and were succeeded by luxuriant rice-plantations, with smiling hills in the background. Among the trees there were some glorious specimens,— some with trunks a hundred and forty feet high,—others spreading out their mighty branches, and hanging their leaves down

into the water, so as to form deliciously cool leafy bowers. Large hives of the wild bee were often hanging on lofty slender stems with very few branches; but to reach hives of this kind and rob them of their honey, the natives make a kind of ladder of bamboo, which is fastened to the trunk of the tree at every two feet, stands about six inches from it, and is carried to a height of eighty feet.

This day we again stopped at a Dyak settlement; but I had scarcely lain down to rest than I heard a sort of loud clapping noise, given very regularly, and in a sort of measured time. I got up, and went towards the place whence the sound proceeded, and there lay a man stretched out quite motionless on the ground, and half-a-dozen young men stood round him slapping his body with all their strength with open hands. I thought the man was dead, and was wondering what might be the meaning of this singular ceremony with his body, when all at once up jumped the dead body amidst the loud laughter of the operators. The game I suppose was over; and I was afterwards informed that exercises of the kind are considered very useful for strengthening the body and rendering it supple.

January 25th. More and more beautiful views are continually presenting themselves. The hills are

multiplying and becoming higher and higher. The peak that just now came into sight cannot be less than 3000 feet high. The scenery reminds me of that of Brazil. Here, too, are vast impenetrable primeval forests, with overwhelming masses of luxuriant vegetation, and here, as well as there, but little cleared land and but few inhabited places. The chief difference is that Borneo is intersected by a countless number of small streams or rivulets, whilst Brazil has scarcely any water but the vast floods of her mighty rivers. What might this island become were it peopled by industrious, peaceful, and truly civilised nations.* Unfortunately this is very far from being the case. The population is scanty, and more intent on war and mutual destruction than on any kind of productive labour; and for white settlers the climate is a great obstacle.

One peculiarity of Borneo is the brown colour of its rivers. Some travellers maintain that this proceeds from their banks being lined with thick woods, and that the masses of leaves falling into the waters

* Borneo is the largest island in the world (of course not including Australia, which is a continent). It has a surface of 260,000 square miles; and its present population consists of 950,000 Dyaks, 200,000 Malays, 54,000 Chinese. Its chief exports are rattans, rice, sago, cocoa-nuts, and dye-stuffs.

dye them of this colour. But I cannot admit this explanation, for in the island of Ceram, which I subsequently visited, where the banks of the streams are quite as thickly clothed with wood, the waters are as clear as crystal.

Alexander von Humboldt remarked this dark colour in the rivers of America, and adds, also, that no crocodiles or fish live in water thus dyed. But in Borneo this is not the case, for both caymans (a kind of crocodile) and fish are found in them in abundance.

In the evening I was again surrounded by a swarm of Dyaks, and conversing with them as well as I could by means of my Malay interpreter. I asked them whether they believed in a Great Spirit, and whether they had any idols or priests? As well as I could understand their answer, they believe in nothing of the kind, and have no priests or idols whatever. It is possible nevertheless that I may have made some mistake with respect to their answers to my first inquiry; for, as to the last, I certainly think I have seen idols among them. If they have no other objects of reverence, however, they have at all events plenty of earthly superiors; for there is not a tribe of a dozen families that does not own a chief, rejoicing in the high sounding title of Rajah.

I was often reminded by this frequency of titles of Hungary and Poland, where everybody who is not a serf is a nobleman.

While we were carrying on this conversation, a boy came in from the woods, bringing a wild pigeon that he had caught there; and a man took it from him, twisted the poor little thing's neck, pulled out some of the long feathers from the wings, and threw it into the fire. Scarcely were the feathers half burnt off, than he took it from the fire again, tore off the head and pinions, and gave them to a child who was standing by eagerly watching the proceedings. He then put the bird once more on the fire, and, after letting it roast for a few minutes, took it off, divided it into six pieces, and distributed it among the same number of children. He himself did not taste a morsel; and I have frequently noticed similar indications of the Dyaks being affectionate parents.

In the night a terrific storm broke over us, accompanied by real tropical torrents of rain, such as, among us, are sometimes called rain-spouts. We all sprang up, and took refuge in the interior of the house, expecting every moment, nevertheless, that its leafy roof would be torn from over our heads. But things violent are seldom of long duration, and

when the deluge had raged for about half-an-hour it suddenly ceased.

The people, in the meantime, had been singing with all their might, and beating on the gong, — I supposed to out-bellow the storm, or drive it away; but they went on, alas! till morning. Their song is a kind of wild yell, in which I nevertheless distinguished two of what might be called melodies, which were both sung as solos by the same persons, and then the rest of the company joined in. To increase the entertainment, four young men also performed a kind of dance. They trod with slow, measured steps round the fireplace, above which the dead head was hanging, and each struck violently on the ground with a cudgel that he held in his hand, and from time to time spat at the skulls. I found afterwards, however, that this music and dancing had nothing to do with the storm, but was intended as a sort of prelude to an approaching campaign.

Among all the tribes that I encountered on this journey the chiefs do not live apart, but in community with the rest, the young men sleeping and washing in what I must call the verandas and antechambers of the houses.

January 26th. My journey among the wild Dyaks had proceeded thus far so entirely without danger or

difficulty,—although I had had some cause for fear,—that I began to feel myself quite careless and at my ease; this day, however, was to bring me a change in this respect.

I was sitting quietly in my proa, gliding along the river, when a small canoe, in which four Dyaks were seated, came rowing swiftly towards us down the stream. They did not stop as they came up, but only screamed to us in passing to turn back and get away as fast as we could, as a tribe a little further up the river was just coming out to make war on us. They themselves, they said, had only escaped because they were not seen.

This news was of course a little startling. So near to the mountains as we were,—for I expected to reach the foot of them this very evening,—now to turn back was grievous.

I held a council with the cook, the only one of my company with whom I could exchange a word, and endeavoured to induce him to go on. Fortunately he was a brave fellow, and thought that, although there was some danger,—for the Dyaks on their war expeditions attack and kill all whom they meet,—yet that the probability was they would respect Rajah Brooke's flag. So up went the flag, and on went

we; though, I must own, grievously against the will of the rest of the party.

We had not gone far before, sure enough, we heard the sounds of the war-song, with its *obligato* accompaniment of drums and gongs. The high-wooded shores still concealed us; but at a few oars' strokes further a sudden bend of the river brought us full in sight of a spectacle that it will be owned was alarming enough. On a small elevation, close to the shore, stood — certainly a hundred savages, with high narrow shields on their arms, and long knives in their hands, and at sight of us they set up a most terrific yell, and began making no less ferocious gestures.

My heart, I must own, gave a leap within me; but it was too late to go back now. Decision and resolution alone could afford us a chance of safety. Opposite the hill where the savages were collected, there lay in the middle of the river a sand-bank; and upon this sprang my valiant cook, and began a parley with the enemy in the Dyak language, so that, unfortunately, I could not understand a word of it. So much greater, therefore, was my consternation, when suddenly the savages rushed down the hill, where they were collected; and flinging themselves, some into canoes, some into the water,

made towards our proa, surrounded it, and began to climb in.

"Now," I thought, "my last hour is really come." But at this very moment I distinguished the voice of my inestimable cook, who was forcing his way towards me, and calling out that there was nothing to fear, and that this was only their way of bidding us welcome; and as he spoke I saw a little white flag hoisted on the hill as a sign of peace. No one who has not been in imminent danger of a terrible death can, I think, form a very clear idea of the feeling of that moment, or of the sudden revulsion when I knew that I was saved. The cook had been right. Rajah Brooke's flag was the talisman that protected us; and not only did these dreaded savages do us no harm, but they behaved in the most friendly manner, and invited me to pay them a visit. I accepted, in order to show that I trusted them, and set a value on their invitation.

This instance of the esteem and veneration in which Rajah Brooke is held by the Dyaks affected me much; for it showed how susceptible these rude nations are of gratitude when they find that they are really honestly and kindly dealt with. I could not help wishing that I had had here some of the enemies of this high-minded gentleman as witnesses of this

38064

scene. I think they could hardly fail to have repented of the charges they have brought against him.*

On going ashore with the savages, I found their women and children encamped in tents behind the height on which the men had been posted. They received me with the same marks of kindness as their husbands, and made me sit down with them. There were eatables spread out upon the ground, especially a number of little cakes of various colours, yellow, brown, and black, which really looked so nice that I accepted them very readily and began to eat forthwith. But I repented my epicurism, for they consisted only of rice and maize flour, mixed with an immense quantity of very rancid fat, which they procure from the fruit called "kawan." The

* At the time of my arrival at Borneo, Rajah Brooke had gone to England to meet the accusations made against him that, in his warlike expeditions against the pirates, he had sacrificed human life, and had burnt proas, huts, &c.

Did the gentlemen who made these charges think that pirates were to be put down with soft speeches? How many human lives have been sacrificed, and villages and towns burnt, by European potentates, without any such righteous purpose—indeed in wars that were themselves little better than piracies on a large scale?

I heard subsequently that Rajah Brooke had come off with flying colours.

brown and black ones receive their colour from an addition of black syrup made from the sugar-cane or the juice of various palms. The good folks would insist on feasting me with these dainties; and to please them I did manage to swallow some mouthfuls, but it was almost more than I could do.

Among the men who surrounded me, several had at their sides the baskets which are destined to receive any heads that the proprietor may succeed in bagging. They were very prettily plaited and ornamented with shells as well as with human hair.

After we had finished our repast, they pressed me to come with them to their regular place of residence, which lay deep in the forest; and I set off with them immediately, without taking any one of my own people with me, believing that among these wild tribes one is more secure and the more respected the more confidence one shows in them.

Their huts I found exactly resembling those I had seen before. They begged me to stay with them the rest of the day and the night, but I wished to get as soon as I could to the mountains; so, after resting for a short time, I took a cordial farewell of my new friends, men and women accompanying me to my boat, pressing my hands, and urging me to come and see them again. They also gave me fruit,

cakes, eggs, and bamboo canes full of boiled rice, by way of provision for the journey.

In the evening I reached *Peng-Kalang-Sing-Toegang*, a place with some dozens of huts, situated at the foot of the Schämel mountains, and the residence of a Malay rajah, to whom I had a letter of introduction from Captain Brooke.

Here I dismissed my proa; for the part of my journey to be done by water (about a hundred and fifty miles from Scaron to the mountains) was now accomplished, and my present task was to cross the mountains on foot. Fortunately, however, the rajah offered to accompany me in person, so that this formidable looking journey no longer presented any difficulty.

The next day the preparations began. The rajah selected the men who were to accompany us, had their weapons put in order, and a stock of provisions laid in, while I occupied myself with observing the mode of life and doings of the inhabitants of the place.

I was allowed free access to the rajah's consort, not only because I was a woman, but because visitors in general are not rigidly excluded; for the Malay women are less jealously watched than the wives of the Turks and other Oriental nations. The lady

in question was still very young, but by no means the loveliest of her sex; on the contrary her face wore, in a remarkable degree, the stamp of dulness and stupidity. Not even her child which was playing about her could bring the smallest expression into it, or call forth one smile. This princely scion in question went, like the other children, stark naked; and its parents were in no way distinguished by their dress from their subjects and slaves. Their sleeping apartment was somewhat superior, being separated by a high bamboo partition from the kitchen and other parts of the hut. It served as a reception room, and contained inlaid wooden chests, embroidered cushions, and the before-mentioned enigmatical, highly-prized vases.

The Malays keep slaves, and condemn to this servile condition not only their prisoners of war, but their insolvent debtors; and the latter have to continue in slavery till some of their relations or friends redeem them; which happens very seldom, as most of these people are excessively poor. The slaves are, however, very well treated, and regarded as members of the family. Indeed, had I not been informed of the relation in which they stood, I should never have guessed it from the behaviour of the masters.

January 28th. My formidable pedestrian journey was now to commence. I had prepared a simple and appropriate costume for it, consisting of trowsers, a petticoat not reaching below the ankle, and which, on the march, frequently had to be tucked up still higher, a jacket, and a magnificent bamboo hat, impervious alike to sun and rain, which I had got in the island of Bali. As an additional protection against the heat I also laid immediately on my head a piece of banana leaf.

As for my *chaussure*, I must own I often had to dispense with stockings, and eke with shoes also, when the road lay through a morass or even through water. Whoever undertakes travels of this kind must be prepared to submit to the same hardships as the natives, and I found that I could do it when I had determined I would.

I have slept many a night on the bare ground in the woods, and many a day taken no food but rice boiled in water.

Our party consisted, besides the rajah, myself, and my servant, of twelve attendants, partly Dyaks and partly Malays, about half of whom were armed.

I had prepared myself, not only for a very bad road, but for the ascent of a lofty mountain chain. This was, however, in a great measure, a mistake;

for our path lay constantly through narrow valleys, in which the ascent was very trifling. I doubt if we were ever more than 500 feet above the plain. But the road was tremendous — an uninterrupted succession of brooks, marshes, and standing pools, through which we had to wade with the water far above our knees. Occasionally we caught enchanting views of a triple mountain chain, rising range above range, one behind the other; and wide valleys lying between, traversed by fine rivers, all buried in the deep slumber of thick, impenetrable woods. Only at rare intervals we came to a little clearing, inhabited by Dyaks and planted with rice, maize, sugar-cane, and a kind of sweet potatoe.

When we came in sight of a settlement of this kind, a halt was made, and a portion of our party sent forward to reconnoitre, and ask permission to pass on. Twice our path led through the very middle of the Dyak houses; and we had to climb up the ladder that forms the entrance on one side, and scramble down a similar one on the other. The Dyaks often purposely refrain from cutting down the trees or opening a path, in order to render the access to their abodes more difficult for an enemy. They leave in the woods only very small and narrow openings, which can easily be closed up.

These dwellings might be compared with what, in fortification, are called block-houses.

After a rather harassing march of eight hours, we stopped at another of these hidden habitations, and without difficulty obtained leave to pass the night there.

January 29th. We had still no heights to ascend, but the way through these dense forests was so encumbered with the roots and fallen trunks of immense trees, that we had constant climbing. Besides this, it led through sloughs, morasses, and streams, which we had either to wade through or cross upon thin bamboo-canes, placing one foot immediately before the other; so that it may be supposed it would have been no very easy travelling, even if the weather had been fine; and we happened to meet with very bad weather.

Whenever the deep silence of the forest was disturbed by any sound, however slight, that seemed at all suspicious, we halted and stood as motionless as if rooted to the spot, not daring to speak, and scarcely to breathe, till some of the men had been sent to reconnoitre, which they did by crawling like serpents, and winding themselves among the trunks and roots of the trees.

The next day we again walked for eight hours,

when we arrived at a place called *Berg-Kallang-Boenot*, which was to be the terminus of our pedestrian journey. In these two toilsome marches of sixteen hours I do not think we had gone more than five-and-thirty miles. Here there also resided a petty Malay prince, at whose abode we passed the night. Of course to all these people, Malays as well as Dyaks, I was a very new and surprising phenomenon. Very few of them had ever seen a white man, and none a white woman; and their astonishment was so much the greater, since, according to their ideas, a woman alone can hardly venture more than a few yards from her hut.

January 30*th*. At *Berg-Kallang-Boenot* I embarked upon the little river *Balang-Luppa* in a very little boat, with only one man to row. The river wound through the woods; it was very narrow—sometimes, indeed, so hemmed in by trees that we could hardly get through. Not the faintest beam of the sun pierced the thick covering of leaves; and the most deathlike silence was around us, broken only at rare intervals by the fluttering of a bird or the spring of a monkey. Acheron itself could hardly have been more silent and gloomy, and the colour of the water was almost as black as ink. After some hours we overtook a little canoe, in

which were a man and woman, a child, a great many fowls, and some household chattels. We stopped to parley, and, after a short conversation, I perceived to my astonishment and consternation that the whole crew and cargo were to be transferred to our little boat. Their own the party hid among the trees. In vain I protested against this move; my rogue of a servant was evidently in favour of it, and did not pay the slightest attention to my remonstrances. This addition to our company of course made us very crowded; and what annoyed me still more was that the new comers insisted on making a fire in the little boat to cook their abominable rice; and the heat and smoke of it came directly in my face.

The gloomy Balang-Luppa fell, after a course of about thirty miles, into the lake *Boenot*, which is about four miles across. Here I noticed a phenomenon that I have never seen anywhere else. The lake was filled with trunks of perfectly dead trees, without bough or leaf, which nevertheless had not fallen or become loosened at the roots, but stood straight up, like palisades planted by human hands. A broad water road, like a natural canal, led us into a second lake, named *Taoman*, which was twice as large as lake Boenot, and, unlike it, had a perfectly smooth and unencumbered surface.

The environs of both lakes were very fine; wide wooded valleys lay to the east and westward, bounded by a picturesque range of mountains, with lofty domes and peaks, the highest of which could not be less than 5000 feet.

From lake Taoman we turned into the beautiful river *Kapuas*, after the *Banjer-massing* the most important in Borneo. It is very unequal in breadth in different parts, so that the average cannot be taken at more than half a mile; but, like most of the rivers in this country, it can hardly be said to have any banks, as the waters spread far into the woods on both sides.

There were fewer inhabited places on it than on the Luppa, on the other side of the Schämel mountains; and had not the occasional bark of a dog or the crowing of a cock given token of life, I should have considered the whole region as entirely uninhabited.

This and the following night I passed in a most inconvenient manner, in the boat. The increase of our party left me so little space, that I was obliged to be quite cramped up, and I would gladly have endeavoured to find shelter among some of the Dyaks; but my boatman would not agree to it, and said it would be too dangerous.

On the morning of the 31st of January we met two proas, a large and a small one, filled with Dyaks and Malays; and in the afternoon a very large one overtook us, and the people in it called to us, in a very imperious tone, to stop. There was no choice now but to obey, for disobedience would have been inconsistent with our weakness. Instead of the pirates, whom we were in fear of, however, the strangers turned out to be only a polite Malay rajah and his attendants, who were on a journey.

After a few questions, as to where I came from, where I was going to, &c., he presented me with a large sort of basin, full of fresh cocoa-nut oil, and some sweet cakes, and we each went on our way.

On the 1st of February we reached *Sintang*, a town of at least 1500 inhabitants, and the residence of a sultan. Here I considered the perilous part of my journey concluded, for the Dyak tribes, whom I had to pass through to reach Pontianah, were subject to Malay princes, to whom I hoped to get recommendations from the Sultan of Sintang, as I had, for this purpose, brought a letter to him from the rajah of Berg-Kallang-Boenot.

I must own, I should have liked to have passed a

longer time among the free Dyaks, as I found them, without exception, honest, good-natured, and modest in their behaviour. I should be inclined to place them, in these respects, above any of the races I have ever known. I might leave all my things lying open, and go away for hours. I never found on my return that the smallest article was missing. They used, indeed, often to beg for trifles, but were quite content to have them refused when I made them understand that I wanted them myself; and they were never troublesome or importunate.

Perhaps I shall be told, when I call them good natured, that the cutting off and preserving the heads of their enemies does not seem to imply any particular amiableness of disposition; but it must really be remembered that this deplorable practice is rather the result of ignorance, superstition, and a low and uncivilised state, than of any special ferocity; and I must maintain the assertion, in support of which I can adduce their quiet domestic mode of life, their moral conduct, the love they evidently bear their children, and the respect they show their old people. The free Dyaks are incomparably more opulent than those who are subject to the Malays. They cultivate rice, maize, and tobacco, and occasionally sugar-cane also, and *ubi*. They get abundance

of fat from the kawan fruit, and collect in the forests pieces of damar or pine-wood, which they use as torches; and they have plenty of sago rattans and cocoa-nuts. With some of these articles they carry on a barter trade for brass, glass beads, salt, and red handkerchiefs—in their eyes most valuable goods, and far better than money. Fowls and pigs are also among their possessions, though they are usually only eaten at weddings and other festive occasions.

Some travellers assert that the free Dyaks are handsome people, but I must own the utmost I can say for them in this respect is that they are not so frightful as the Malays,—as their cheek bones are not quite so broad and projecting, and their noses not altogether so flat. They are generally of a middle size, have arms and legs exceedingly thin, and little or no beard, as they are in the habit of plucking it out. Ugly as they are, however, I think it by no means impossible that if I lived long among them I might be reconciled to many things that appear revolting at first, and perhaps even come to admire them.

The Dyaks are permitted to take as many wives as they like, but they make a very moderate use of the privilege, and mostly content themselves with one, whom they treat well, and do not overload with

work, as all the heavy labour is performed by men. Divorces or separations are very uncommon amongst them; and in the relations between the sexes their conduct is mostly far more irreproachable than that of the Malays. The girls and young men are kept rather strictly apart; the former sleeping in little chambers near their parents, and the young men, as I have said, on the verandahs or in the huts of their chiefs. In these respects the manners of the Dyak savages might often, I fear, bear an advantageous comparison with those of the lowest classes in some Christian civilised communities. They do not mingle with other races, and the girls who marry with the Chinese are no longer regarded as belonging to their tribe.

The Dyaks use no written character, and, as far as I could make out, have no religious belief. On this point there is, however, some difference of opinion among travellers; and Temmink maintains that they have a religion which is a kind of Fetishism, —that they believe in a god called *Djath*, who rules the upper world, and a god *Sang-jang*, who is master of the lower.

They are said to represent these gods as having human, though invisible, forms, — to invoke their help, and to sacrifice to them by scattering rice upon

the ground. In their dwellings also wooden deities are said to have been found. Other travellers ascribe a kind of pantheism to the Dyaks, and assert that they believe in deities both above and below the earth, as well as in a number of good and bad spirits, amongst whom a certain *Badjang-Brani* is the worst. All diseases they believe to be occasioned by these bad spirits, whom they endeavour to drive away by striking on the gong.

According to others, again, they have no religious ideas at all, but a very confused notion of one spirit, and of the immortality of the soul.

I cannot undertake either to contradict or to confirm these assertions; all I can say with strict truth is, that during my stay in their country I never saw among the tribes with whom I came in contact either temple or idol, priest, or sacrifice. At weddings, births, and deaths, many of the tribes did indeed perform certain ceremonies, and fowls and pigs were decapitated and eaten; but it did not appear to me that these things had any connection with religion: —only, on concluding a treaty of peace, as I have before mentioned, the pig killed was not eaten, but thrown into the river. The dead are burnt among some tribes of Dyaks, and the ashes preserved in hollow trees; others hang them in almost inaccessible

places, or bind them to trees with their feet uppermost.—But to return to my journey:—

The situation of the little town of Sintang is charming; the huts lie partly scattered on the banks of the fine river Kapuas, partly half-hidden among cocoa-palms.

I could not land immediately on my arrival, as custom required me to remain in the boat till the sultan had appointed me a dwelling. I sent therefore my servant, who arrayed himself in his state attire on the occasion, to deliver my letter of recommendation from the Rajah of Berg-Kallang-Boenot. He soon came back, however, with the letter, and accompanied by a minister of the sultan's, who informed me that his master was absent, and would not return till the evening or the following morning. The minister conducted me nevertheless into a hut, where room was made for me, and the beautiful mats, carpets, and *clambu* that he had brought with him arranged.

Late in the evening some one came to tell me that the sultan had returned, and would expect me on the following morning in the Divan. Fortunately I had now learned enough of the Malay language to be able to understand the people.

The next morning a large handsome boat, rowed

by twenty men, came to fetch me, and my servant wrapped the letter in two silk handkerchiefs and followed me. At the wooden palace of the sultan, which lies near the bank of the river, I was received with music and the firing of guns: the path from the river to the Divan, a distance of a few hundred yards, was spread with matting, and the sultan advanced half-way to meet me, as a mark of respect. It was very evident nevertheless, by the embarrassment of his manner, that the good man did not know very well how to treat a European woman. With a sort of comical grace he extended to me the tips of his fingers (an astonishing familiarity according to their notions), which I just touched with the tips of mine, and thus we floated along, as if dancing a minuet, to the Divan, which was only separated from the great hall by a wooden railing about two feet high. Here stood, half covered with coloured cotton, a clumsy table and chair, and, in default of a second chair, a wooden chest. The sultan and I took our places at the table, whilst the ministers and great men of his dominions sat in a row on the ground along the walls. Outside had collected a throng of people, to whom the arrival of a European woman of course presented a remarkable spectacle.

The rajah's letter of recommendation was put on a silver cup, and brought to the sultan, the bringer shuffling along upon his knees, with downcast eyes, and kissing the sultan's hand with great devotion as he presented the cup. His Highness then commanded his prime minister to open and read it.

A letter to a sultan, or any other person of high distinction, must, according to Mahommedan custom, consist of a whole sheet, only the first page of which must be written on; and should this not suffice, a second or a third sheet must be taken.

As soon as the reading of the letter was over, refreshments were brought; and a complete cover was laid for me, though the sultan had only a plate. The refreshments consisted of tea, without sugar or milk, sweetmeats and fruit, which was served on about twenty beautifully cut-glass plates, and partaken of by the entire company present.

When the repast was concluded, the sultan led me to the apartments of the female members of his family, where also he had had the politeness to have a raised seat prepared for me; and presented me to his wife and daughter; and, to say the truth, a most ugly couple they were, of the genuine Malay type. Although there were many men, and young ones

too, present, the ladies wore no covering but a simple sarang, which half covered the bosom.

This Sultan of Sintang who in his dominions is a complete despot, has forbidden his subjects to take more than one wife, the privilege of a more liberal allowance rightfully belonging in his opinion only to princes. I do not know though whether he has claimed it in his own case, as he only presented one to me.

At my departure the same ceremonies were observed as on my arrival.

I was a good deal surprised at the grand style of my reception, more especially as it was so much in the European manner, and I was certain that the Sultan of Sintang had never seen any Europeans; but my servant explained the riddle to me. When I sent him ashore with the letter on my first coming, the sultan had not really been absent as I was told; but as he had not the least idea how to receive a European woman, he thought proper to consult my attendant as to what was proper to be done; and thereupon this personage took upon him to describe all the solemnities observed at Sarawak when Rajah Brooke returned to his dominions. I had, therefore, his eloquence to thank for having been received pretty much in the style of a reigning princess. The chairs and table had been hastily made for the occasion;

and the knife, fork, &c. were my own, and had been brought by my servant.

On bidding me farewell, the sultan promised to place at my disposal a *sampsan* (a shorter and broader boat than a proa), which was to take me as far as Pontianah; and I begged that he would do mé the favour to send it by sunrise the next morning.

On the following morning, the 3rd of February, immediately after sunrise, His Highness himself was announced coming to return my visit. He did not, it seemed, consider it proper to do this on the same day when I had come to him; and as I meant to make so short a stay, he had been compelled to choose this very early hour. He came accompanied by his father and some of his male relations; but it is not the etiquette for the ladies of his family to return visits. The father of the sultan wore a cap and jacket of gold brocade, the first costly articles of apparel that I had seen on a Bornean prince; and it must be owned the old gentleman needed to be set off by a little finery, if that was any improvement, for the usual ugliness of his race was heightened in his case by an immense wen, the second that I had seen on the island. The first, a small specimen, adorned the consort of the Rajah of Berg-Kallang-Boenot.

This distinguished company proved by no means so gentle and modest in their behaviour as the Dyak head-fanciers; for they pulled open and rummaged about all my packages; and especially on a small travelling bag, that unluckily was standing open, they fell like wild animals. I really had not eyes enough to watch my goods, and protect them from damage; and with my poor collection of insects and reptiles my noble guests were particularly mischievous.

The princely papa fairly took possession of the said travelling bag, and, pointing to the various articles, soap, tooth-brushes, &c., demanded what they were all for. I explained; but the consequence of my explanation was that he was so charmed with these curious contrivances that he wanted to keep them for his own behoof. I took them from him, however, before he went away, and gave him as a compensation some pictures and trifling articles that I could better spare.

The entire ignorance these people showed of the ordinary articles in my possession was a sufficient proof that they can seldom or never before have come into contact with Europeans. They did not understand the use of the simplest. I had to explain and show them everything; and there was scarcely

one that they did not evince a desire to appropriate; so that I was heartily glad when my grand party had finally turned their backs.

The sultan, however, carried his politeness so far as to accompany me two miles on my journey.

The way from Sintang to Pontianah was performed very quickly in three and a half days. I had taken the precaution to inquire of the natives at Sintang how long this journey ought to take,—a very necessary precaution, without which one is entirely in the power of these people, — and I had been told six days, or, at the least, four; I therefore begged the sultan to give orders to his men to take me in four days; though my servant highly disapproved of my proceeding, as he liked to journey slowly and quite at his ease. I did not, however, trouble myself about him or ask for his help any more, but took on myself the command of the boatmen.

The banks of the river were more or less inhabited, and we passed many little villages; among others, one called *Sungan*, after Sintang the largest town in the sultan's dominions.

I paid a visit, in passing, to the rajah, but did not stay more than an hour.

A mile from Pontianah the river Kapuas unites

with the Landah, and both lose their names in that of the Pontianah, which falls at last into a lake about twenty-five miles off.

On the 6th of February I found myself safe and sound at Pontianah.

CHAP. IV.

PONTIANAH.—EXCURSION TO LANDAH.—A CHINESE KAPTHAY.—ANOTHER PEDESTRIAN JOURNEY.—A MUD BATH IN THE MORASS.—BAMBOO BRIDGES.—THE LANGUAGE OF SIGNS.—SUPPER WITH THE BANAM.—RATO.—THE DIAMOND MINES.—RETURN TO PONTIANAH.

PONTIANAH was the first of the Dutch settlements in the East that I had ever visited; and I confess I entered it with rather uneasy feelings. The Dutch had been represented by many travellers as so cold, so difficult of access, so indifferent to everything unconnected with their pecuniary interests, that I almost shrank from meeting them; and I should have felt an unfriendly reception so much the more, that I had been almost spoiled by the extreme kindness and courtesy shown me by the English, both in this and my former journey.

I despatched the letter to the Dutch government of the place, with which Rajah Brooke had favoured me, to the proper quarter, and then remained sitting in my Sampsan in a state of considerable anxiety.

My servant brought me back the vexatious intelligence that the resident, Mr. Willer, was then absent in Batavia. His representative, however, Secretary Van Hardenberg, came down immediately to receive me, and that in so thoroughly cordial a manner that I felt immediately relieved from all anxiety.

There are no hotels or inns at places to which so few Europeans come as to Borneo; but Mr. Van Hardenberg placed at my disposal a small house that happened to be standing empty, which had served as a residence a few years before to an American missionary; and he added, moreover, that all my wants should be provided for. In the evening he presented me to the wife of the Resident, in whom I found a most amiable and cultivated woman, and she invited me to take up my abode in her house—an invitation that I could not but joyfully accept; so that I gladly gave up my cottage almost as soon as I had entered it.

I had undertaken the journey to Pontianah in a great measure for the sake of visiting the celebrated diamond mines of Landah; but when, on the following day, I expressed this wish, I learned, to my regret, that, on the morning of the very day on which

I arrived, a Catholic priest, named Sanders, had set off for that place in a convenient government boat. It was too late to overtake him; but I was informed that, as the journey by land was four days shorter than by water, if I could resolve to undertake that, I might still get to Landah before him. In any case I should meet him there, and could return in his company, and with the convenience of the boat; so I made up my mind to the land journey without hesitation, though the distance was more than 200 miles, and I knew I should have the half of it to travel on foot.

Mr. Van Hardenberg wished to give me a servant, for he said it was impossible I could get through the country without a knowledge of either the Malay or Dyak languages, as I should have daily to change boatmen, bearers, &c.; but really, after the specimen of this class of people I had had in the servant given me by Captain Brooke, I had taken such an aversion to them, that I determined to do without them, and go alone. I only begged to be furnished with letters to the chiefs and rajahs through whose territories I should have to pass.

It was not till the 10th of February that Mr. Van Hardenberg was able to procure for me a small boat,

which was to take me as far as Kubiang, a distance of sixty miles.

He accompanied me to the water-side, and, when I got in, called out to me,—"If I had not myself witnessed the fact of your setting off on such a journey as this entirely alone, I really would not have believed it."

I proceeded for about thirty miles up the beautiful stream of the Landah, to where the small river Mandor falls into it at a place called *Kubu-trap*, where I was to pass the night in the house of a Chinese. Mr. Van Hardenberg had furnished me with a whole hamperful of provisions, but, as I was certain that before morning they would be destroyed by ants, I distributed them with easy generosity among my boatmen. Eatables can only be preserved from the ravages of these insects in well closed tin cases.

As early as three o'clock in the morning we were again in motion, gliding up the Mandor; and this small stream is so completely closed in by woods, that we seemed to be passing through one unbroken leafy bower. With the rising sun there awoke some life in the forest. I heard, indeed, no songs of birds, but on all sides the less harmonious screaming of monkeys of various species,—the gigantic ourang-outang, the long-armed kalampia, the black siaman,

the bintangon or nose ape, and others. The last four kinds are natives only of Borneo.

At ten o'clock we reached Kubiang, the end of our water journey; and I prepared myself for a walk of eight miles to Mandor, whither two of my boatmen were to accompany me.

For the first seven miles the way lay through dark woods, and, as the phrase is, "over stock and stone." Then we came to a pleasant clearing, covered with plantations. The soil was sandy, a very rare thing in Borneo; and well kept paths, and planks or broad trunks of trees laid across the streams, announced to me that I was on Chinese ground, as neither Malays nor Dyaks have the least notion of providing any comfort or convenience whatever.

In Mandor I took up my quarters with the Chinese chief or *Kapthay*, to whom my first letter was addressed. In the Chinese settlements which are under the protection of the Dutch, a Chinese is generally chosen as chief or governor, who receives the title of *kapthay*, captain, or major, according to the size of the place. The dignity brings no emolument with it, and is only for a year, but admits of a second election.

Many of these kapthays live in forts, and enjoy almost princely authority, exercising judicial power

over their countrymen, even to the pronouncing and executing sentences of death; and as long as they keep things quiet, and pay punctually their opium taxes, the Dutch do not interfere with their government in the least.

The Kapthay of Mandor was one of the most important of these functionaries, and dwelt in a fortress at the entrance of which two six-pounders were planted. His residence consisted of many open courts and halls, and a few small low sleeping-rooms in which the women had their abode. The largest of the halls served as dining-room, sitting-room, and church, or temple for religious worship. Here were gods, beautifully decorated altars, wax-tapers burning, and rice, tea, and fruit offered to the said gods as sacrifice.

Towards evening the kapthay conducted me into the little town, which lies close to the fort, and consists of two rows of houses, containing about 700 inhabitants.

After the walk he took me to see his *pigsties*, which were large and airy, and, what was remarkable, as they belonged to a Chinese, very clean. The kapthay, I understand, great man as he is, carries on a considerable trade in pigs and pork. These animals are washed or *rinsed*, by having water poured over

them twice every day; and they are fed on a mixture of rice and various leaves (of the *kiang*, *kladi*, and *guelang* plants), which are cut small and boiled, and then mixed in the proportion of three parts to one part of boiled rice. The animals fed on this mixture were remarkably large and fat, so fat indeed that some of them could, or would, hardly drag themselves to their trough. Besides the pigsties, I had to admire the kitchen, which was very clean, and the fare prepared therein, both for masters and servants, excellent. Rice formed of course the solid foundation, standing in fact in the place of bread among us; but besides this there were boiled fowls, pork, and vegetables, and a number of smaller dishes. This Chinese kapthay, indeed, lived incomparably better and in a more cleanly manner than the greatest Malay rajah. His wife (he had but one) wore rich dresses, and possessed both money and diamonds; and their child, a baby of eight months old, was dressed in silk, with gold trinkets, and had a silk cap embroidered with gold on its little head.

The kapthay asked me again and again whether I had quite determined on travelling on foot to Landah. He informed me that Mr. Sanders, who had been there a few days before, had had the same

plan, but had given it up on learning that he would have to make a great circuit to avoid a district in which the Dyak tribes were in a disturbed state, and that the road was bad beyond all description. I did not allow myself to be frightened, however, and only begged that he would find me a good guide, and arrange the journey so that I might reach Landah as quickly as possible.

This night I passed in a comfortable room, and in a clean good bed.

February 12th. After an abundant breakfast of boiled fowls, rice, eggs, and fruit, I set out on my second walking journey, accompanied by a Chinese guide and a Dyak cooly, or porter, who both set off at a pace as if we were running for our lives, and continued the whole day the same "hot haste." I really believe we ran twenty miles without stopping. Fortunately it was on Chinese ground, and over good smooth paths; so that though I reached Sompa in a rather exhausted state, I was no further affected by my exertions. Here my Chinese attendants delivered me over to the Malay rajah, who was to forward me another stage; and I had not only no regret on parting with my Chinese guide, but was delighted to get rid of him, for his curiosity had been intolerable. Before I was aware of him, he

had got hold of my travelling bag and peeped into and examined everything it contained; and moreover, though I did not know it till afterwards, had stolen some money out of it — the first time I had been robbed in all my travels.

February 13th. This day's journey was short; I scarcely estimate it at more than fourteen miles—but such miles! There was certainly variety; for sometimes we had to climb over trunks and roots of trees, sometimes to walk through swamps, and sometimes to walk through the *Alang-Alang*, a kind of jungle grass, five or six feet high, and here intersected by very narrow, deep, slippery paths, on which you are continually falling. Immediately after rain,—and so near the equator there are few days without rain,—when the sun breaks out again in all his scorching force, these deep narrow paths between the high grass are full of vapour, and are hot and close to suffocation. Yesterday and to-day we have been continually enclosed among high mountains; but the paths wind out of one valley into another, so that we have seldom had to climb more than two or three hundred feet. At these points we often obtained the most exquisite glimpses of scenery. In these, as in the Schämel mountains, the ranges towered one above another in two and threefold chains, with

spacious valleys between, and rich, dark, impenetrable forests. The more I saw of this beautiful country, the more enchanted I was with it, and the more fervently I wished to see it filled by a civilised industrious population, subjected only to a mild just government.

This afternoon I took a cold bath *malgré moi*, for I fell from a Borneo bridge (that is to say, a bamboo-stick), a distance of five feet, into the marsh below. In I went, over my shoulders, and my companions had some trouble to pull me out again. When they did, I was of course covered with mud; but fortunately there was a nice clear brook close by, and I seated myself in it, and had myself rinsed in the same manner that the kapthay did his pigs, namely by having water poured over me until the mud was entirely washed off my clothes; then, dripping wet as I was, I had to walk several hours to the place where we were to pass the night. I really thought that the fall and the involuntary bath would have done me some harm, for I was very warm at the time; but, thank God, it did not. I suffered nothing more from it than the fright.

We spent the night in *Bo-Ba-Ker*, a small Chinese town of 400 inhabitants; and here also I was called on to admire the clean spacious kitchen and hand-

some pigsties of my host. The Chinese prefer pork to every other meat, and devote therefore all possible care to these animals. The poorest Chinese indulges in pork once or twice a week; and incomparably better fare is to be obtained by travellers among the Chinese than among the Malays or Dyaks. You get good clean food, and generally a little room to yourself to sleep in; and whoever is fond of tea may revel to his heart's content in the beverage.

A Chinese never drinks water, and in the poorest cottage a large pot of tea is always standing ready, from which every one may quench his thirst when he pleases. It must be owned, however, that the Chinese tea is mostly very bad, and of an extremely bitter taste; it is only what you get among the rich that Europeans consider drinkable.

On the 14th we had a very severe march of more than nine hours, through thick woods and high jungle grass; and we only did twenty miles. The way led mostly through a region inhabited by Dyaks, whom my companions said they were afraid of; and they ran on at such a rate, that it was with the utmost difficulty I kept up with them. Fast as they went, however, they kept the most anxious watch; and whenever the faintest sound was heard in the woods they could tell immediately whether it pro-

ceeded from a beast or a human being. When the latter was the case, they stopped instantly, with every appearance of terror; and very likely those from whom the sounds proceeded did the same thing. A deathlike silence followed. Then my two attendants would sometimes call out that they were only accompanying a white woman, with a letter of protection from the Rajah in Sompa, to Darid. Sometimes we got no answer; but sometimes a few Dyaks would suddenly stand before us, as if they had sprung out of the earth. They had come quite close to us, without our perceiving it, and without making the slightest noise, and only emerged from the forest when they saw that from our little party there was nothing to fear.

In the course of this day we passed what is called a *pantak*, a small square enclosure, made with great wooden figures that stretch out their arms as if they were dancing. These places are made by the Dyaks, who, after a warlike expedition, come here with the heads they have captured, and perform the first solemnities. Both Dyaks and Malays appear to have a great veneration for these pantaks, and believe, it is said, that whoever does the least damage to any of the wooden figures will be attacked by evil spirits and shortly die.

From this it would appear that the Dyaks do really believe in evil spirits.

A little before reaching the village of Darid we came to the river Mengak, which, like most rivers of Borneo, has such a tranquil and undisturbed course that you never suspect its existence till you come in sight of it. Since this river, by means of its connection with the Suar, into which it falls, leads to Landah, our pedestrian excursion ought to have ended here. I found, however, that all the people were busy with the rice harvest, and the rajah was not at all inclined to spare men to man a boat for me. In three days he said the heaviest work would be over, and then he would see what could be done for me; but this did not suit me at all, for by that arrangement I should miss Mr. Sanders. I asked the rajah, therefore, to give me a guide and a cooly, or even a cooly only who knew the way, and declared I would continue the journey on foot.

For a long time they would not hear of this, but I worried them so intolerably that at last they gave way, and not a little proud was I of my triumph. Alone, and knowing but a few words of the Dyak language, my will had obtained the mastery over theirs, and effected the purpose I had in view, in spite of opposition.

February 13*th.* Again walking, or rather running, the whole day, during which we did twenty miles. Our route was a very circuitous one, for the Malays as well as the Dyaks had here pursued the policy of closing up paths and rendering them inaccessible, to protect themselves against some neighbours with whom they were constantly at discord. We passed several Dyak villages, but only stayed long enough to refresh ourselves with a draught of water or cocoa-milk.

A few miles from Tata, the goal of the present day's journey, we came to a bridge so dangerous that it really made me shudder to think of crossing it. It consisted of nothing more than a few bamboo-sticks tied together, and suspended at a height of thirty feet across a stream—the Suar, here 100 feet broad. The natives generally choose for such passages places where strong branches of trees project over the water; or where perhaps the trunks themselves stand in it, and can be used as pillars to which to fasten the bamboo-canes.

A bridge so high and long as the one now before me is usually, indeed, provided with a sort of hand-rail, but woe to any one who should take it for a support and lean on it in the slightest degree. They would infallibly be plunged into the depths below.

It consists only of two very thin bamboo-canes, bound together by a cross piece at about every ten feet; and can serve for nothing more than to assist you to maintain your equilibrium.

My proportions are not of the most substantial order, but I could not help trembling as I committed them to this airy ghost of a bridge. The frail reed danced under my feet, the still more fragile railing shook under my hand, and my head turned giddy as I glanced down and saw far below me the river hurrying on its course. Yet after all I did reach the opposite shore in perfect safety.

Yesterday and to-day I had really some hardships to undergo. One-third of the way was through jungle grass; the other two-thirds up and down high hills covered with dense forests, and right through several marshes; and I was compelled to go barefoot like the natives of the country. Shoes would infallibly have stuck in the mud and been left behind; and high boots would have become so heavy that I could not have walked in them. Another inconvenience was that I was sure to be, at least once a day, drenched through with the tropical rain, and had then to let my clothes be dried on me by the heat of the burning sun. The only thing that made me amends was the constant

beauty of scenery displayed in this mountainous region.

At Tata I found the same difficulty as at Darid; there were no men to be spared for a proa, for all were busy as before with the rice harvest. I could not here make myself understood by the people as they spoke only the Dyak; and I was obliged to eke out my limited stock with hieroglyphics or picture writing. I drew a proa with eight rowers, and near it a little canoe with only one, and myself steering. Then I pointed to the large boat, and signified that I did not want that, but the small one with one man.

At last they understood me, laughed at my way of making myself intelligible, nodded their approval, and promised to fulfil my wish, and let me have one boatman.

I had subsequently also often occasion to remark how well and quickly savages understand the language of signs; and I became at last so accustomed to it, that when I came back among the whites, I had to watch myself very carefully that I might not have recourse to it involuntarily, and accompany my words with pantomimic gestures.

The people of Borneo, both Dyaks and Malays, are in general very fond of their ease, and difficult

to get in motion; and the only people I remember who can be compared with them in this respect are the men at the post stations in Russia. There I have often had to wait several hours till the courier was buckled up, the horses fed, and all things ready for a start.

Here in Borneo it was the *mahan* (dinner) that was my great stumblingblock. This word mahan plays a most important part here. Whenever you ask after anybody, and he does not make his appearance, you are sure to hear the word *mahan*, and then the matter is settled. One would suppose they had a most voluminous bill of fare, as the preparation of food seems to occupy so large a space in their lives; and yet they have in fact nothing to eat but rice, some little dried fish, and a few other trifles. Any one who sets the smallest value upon time can hardly help getting out of patience with them.

I found it impossible to get away to-day till ten o'clock, and we again came to a halt at four, at a place called Sawal, where the river Suar has three little falls, of which the first is the largest.

The proas are here emptied, and carried over rocks at the side of the fall, and then loaded again when it is passed. In general the people manage to arrive

at night, and then they only have to carry the proa, and load it again the next morning. As this is the custom, it was determined that we also should pass the night at the falls; although we might easily have gone on, for the boat was very light, and my baggage only weighed ten pounds.

We slept on a rock under the open sky; and in the morning I myself helped to carry the boat past the fall, and by noon we had reached Landah. It was high time I found, for Mr. Sanders intended setting off on the following morning on his return to Pontianah.

He was not a little astonished to see me arrive thus entirely alone; but still more when he heard of the rough journey I had had to make, and that on foot, in order to avoid the disturbed districts of the Dyaks.

He was so obliging as to defer his return for a day to accommodate me, and, as it afterwards appeared, he had no cause to repent having done so.

Landah, like all Malay towns, consists of irregular groups of bamboo huts; it stands close to the river, contains about a thousand inhabitants, and is the seat of a *Panam-bahan*, a personage of higher dignity than a rajah, but of less than a sultan.

In the evening we were invited to present our-

selves to this great man, who received us in his Divan surrounded by four ministers and many of the attendants and people. The prince, the ministers, Mr. Sanders, and myself, were accommodated with chairs placed round a table. The accommodation, however, appeared to be rather doubtful in the case of some of the company, for I noticed that the ministers drew up one leg after another, and were soon sitting comfortably cross-legged.

The table was covered quite in European fashion with table-cloth, knives and forks, &c., and, moreover, spread with excellent fare — roasted, stewed, and potted fowls, ducks, lamb, fish, rice, and so forth. Instead of wine we had lukewarm sherbet, but not so good as I have tasted in Persia and the East. In default of fine fruit, it is prepared from herbs and sugar, and tastes then much like medicine. We all made use of the knives and forks during the banquet, but some of us employed these instruments in such a comical manner that I could hardly help laughing.

The dress of the prince was very simple. One of the ministers wore a fine cloth jacket with gold embroidered facings, but it must have seen a great deal of service, for his elbows made their appearance through the sleeves. Out at elbows or not, however, these people are very rich in diamonds, though they

carefully conceal them, and more especially from the eyes of us greedy Europeans, whose rapacity, not without reason, they stand much in awe of. On this occasion they wore only a few, in rings, but they were very fine stones.

We flattered ourselves that we should be allowed to see the prince's treasures, but we were mistaken. This was rather vexatious, as we were told he was in possession of the finest diamond ever seen in the world, one far exceeding the renowned Koh-i-Noor; but this diamond is never shown to any one, and it is not even known where it is hidden, so much is its owner in dread of being robbed of it, or even perhaps assassinated on its account. What a very desirable property it must be!

The conversation at table turned on my travels, and particularly on the recent ones in Borneo. What most surprised the prince was that I should have been able to pass in safety through the country of the independent Dyaks. He thought I must be under some immediate and special divine protection, and be in fact more than an ordinary mortal; and this notion, fortunately perhaps for me, I found prevailing in many places, as well among the Mahommedans as among the ruder nations. Some thought I was seeking for the spirit of a deceased relative, and

some regarded me as a kind of *demi*-saint,—an idea that undoubtedly served as a protection to me. The Prince of Landah was much amazed, too, at my pedestrian performances, and declared that, young as he was, he could not walk for two hours together.

I asked him whether he had not any curiosity to see something more of the world than Landah; but he answered with great naïveté that he liked his ease better than all the wonderful things in the world.

It was to the interest inspired in the prince and his ministers by the account of my wanderings, that we were indebted for receiving, on the following morning, a promise that we should be taken to one of the largest diamond mines — a favour very seldom granted to Europeans. When permission has been asked, the answer generally given is that the mine is not at present worked, yields nothing, and so forth. Had it not been for my arrival, Mr. Sanders would have had to leave the place without seeing it.

The prince dismissed us at ten o'clock, and one of the ministers undertook to escort us home; but instead of taking us to our abode, he led us to his own — evidently a premeditated piece of politeness, for just as we came to it, we saw arriving also the chairs and the table, which, it seemed, he had bor-

rowed of the prince in order that he too might receive us in European style.

I was, of course, tired by my journey, and wished to stay only a very little while, but I was not allowed to depart; and soon, to my horror, I saw that the table was being spread a second time, with the very service that had displayed its magnificence in the palace of the prince. But the case was not altogether so bad as I had feared, for the minister was only about to add a dessert of fruits, pastry, and sherbet to the supper we had already taken. We did not, however, get home till midnight.

Feb. 18.—In the morning we set off by water for the diamond mine of Mongo, in company with the minister. The diamonds are found here in low sand and earth hills, which also contain many flints. At the foot of these hills, holes are made two feet broad, and about two and a half deep, into which the earth and stones loosened by the rain, fall. This is then carried in baskets to a neighbouring tank, about twenty feet long and fifteen broad, in which stand the washers, who are furnished with large flat wooden trays. The earth is put into these trays, a little at a time, and shaken and washed until the stones are all loosened and separated from the earth. The washers then feel about it lightly with their

hands, collect all the stones, and examine them carefully to see whether there are any precious ones among them. They then let the remainder fall into the basin, and continue this work till they have nothing left in their trays but fine black sand and earth, which is then also thrown into the basin; but both stones and earth are subjected to another careful examination before they are allowed to leave the tank. After rain none but the workmen, who are Chinese, are allowed to approach the place. Some baskets full of the earth were washed in our honour, but only two diamonds, of the size of pins' heads, were found. Of these Mr. Sanders had one, and I the other; and the minister said he had received orders to allow me to search for diamonds, and to keep whatever I found; but I replied that I had not come there to get diamonds, but to see the mines; and I made no use of the permission.

There are many other places in this country besides the Mongo mines where diamonds are found; and all that weigh above three carats, wherever found, must be sold to the prince, who usually gives goods in exchange for them,—a kind of trade from which he is pretty sure to derive a handsome profit.

The Borneo diamonds, even at the places where they are found, bear a very high price.

In the evening we were again invited to the Panam-bakan, whom our company appeared to entertain; and hints were even given us that, as we seemed so much in favour, we should perhaps be after all allowed to see the treasures; but the prince's complaisance did not go so far as that.

On the 19th we again embarked on the river Landah, on our return journey to Pontianah. We went in the large boat as far as the mouth of the river Karanyan, where we got into a smaller boat with the purpose of going up it to the village of Karanyan, in which some American missionaries resided for several years. Their object was to make proselytes among the Dyaks; and they probably hoped for more success among them than among the Mahommedans, who mostly cling to their faith with great firmness. They found themselves disappointed, however, and finally left the place, without, as far as I could hear, making a conquest of a single soul.

The row up the Karanyan was a very beautiful, but not a very convenient one, for the stream was very shallow, and the channel so choked up with trunks of trees, that it seemed to have been done intentionally to keep off intruders. Many living trees also bent down so low over the water that we had to

lie down quite flat in the boat, in order to effect a passage through these natural gates.

Although we were several hours on the way, the time passed very quickly in admiring contemplation of such a magnificent variety of palms, leaf-woods, shrubs, creepers, and orchidaceæ, as can scarcely be imagined by any one who has not seen it. There were such giants among them that I was obliged to lie quite back in the boat to be able to catch a glimpse of their tops.

At Karanyan we found one of the missionary houses standing, though two others, as well as a little chapel, had vanished without leaving a trace behind. The remaining one was under the particular care of a Malay, who received from the missionaries a compensation for his trouble. They had promised on their departure to return soon again; but this was two years ago, and nothing had yet been seen of them. We found some articles of furniture and some books that had belonged to them.

From this place we took a walk of four miles to *Taborg* and *Sareton,* in order to visit some Dyak tribes who have their abode in those villages; but we saw directly from their undecorated appearance, and the small stores of rice, poultry, or pigs that they possessed, that they belonged to the dependent

races; and, in fact, we found they were subject to the Panam-bakan.

In their features and deportment, too, we missed the open, tranquil, pleasant expression of the free tribes. They received us in a cold, gloomy, distrustful manner, and only thawed a little after Mr. Sanders had made them a present of some salt and tobacco. But I had again occasion to admire the modesty of the Dyaks, and their good temper among themselves. Instead of thronging in upon us and snatching the presents out of each other's hands as the Malays often did, they took gently what we gave them, and waited quite patiently until the oldest among them had made the distribution—a distribution in which the women received their share as well as the men.

We asked whether the missionaries used to visit them often, and they said every three or four days; they used to preach, read something out of a book, talk to them a little, and then go away again.

Towards evening we went back to Karanyan, took possession for the night of the missionaries' house, and on the following morning returned down the river to our convenient boat, in which we continued the journey the whole way back to Pontianah and arrived there quite safe on the 22nd of February.

CHAP. V.

PONTIANAH. — MORTGAGES. — OPIUM FARMING. — OPIUM SMOKERS. — AMOK. — JOURNEY TO SAMBAS. — THE PANGERO-RATO. — COURTESY OF THE DUTCH OFFICERS. — RETURN TO PONTIANAH. — THE BOA. — SOME REMARKS ON THE RACES OF BORNEO.

I COULD now allow myself time to make myself a little acquainted with Pontianah. The situation of the town is anything but pleasing. It lies twenty miles from the sea, on a plain that, with the exception of some rice plantations, is entirely covered with thick woods, and whose heavy monotony is only broken by the confluence of the Landah and the Kapuar, which here form a fine delta. The immediate environs of the town consist entirely of swamp and morass, so that you can hardly walk a thousand yards on dry ground in any direction.

Near the town is a fort, surrounded by earthworks, and garrisoned by a hundred and thirty men, but the whole European colony is formed by the resident and five or six official persons, some mili-

tary officers, and a doctor. The inhabitants are reckoned at about six thousand.

On the opposite shore of the Pontianah resides a sultan, who, like the so-called independent princes of India under the English, is supposed to reign freely over his people, but, in reality, is quite under the control of the Dutch resident, and dare not undertake anything, or so much as cross the frontier of his dominions, without leave.

The only difference between the princes of Hindostan and those of Borneo is, that the latter have sought the assistance of the Dutch of their own accord, whilst the former have mostly been subjected against their will. The princes of Borneo have not the power, on the one hand, to settle the disputes of the Malays, Chinese, and Dyaks, and, on the other, to put down the conspiracies often formed in their own families; and they therefore willingly accept the yoke of the Dutch government for the protection it implies. They are left to the undisturbed enjoyment of most of their lands, of the taxes paid by their subjects, of the gold washings and diamond mines within their territories; but the Dutch claim for themselves the salt monopoly, and the revenue derived from opium, as well as from some other less important articles. Many of these sultans

and princes even receive a yearly pension from the Dutch, as a compensation for the rights of which they have been deprived. The Sultan of Pontianah, for instance, has an annual pension of 48,000 rupees (4800*l.*).

There exists at Borneo, as I have already said, a class of slaves, partly prisoners taken in war, and partly debtors who have not been able to meet the claims on them at the appointed time, and have fallen consequently into the power of the creditor, as a forfeited pledge. In accordance with this barbarous law, the debtor must serve his creditor as a slave until the debt is liquidated; and should he die before that time, his wife, his son, his daughter, or the nearest of his other relatives, has to take his place. Whoever does not pay his taxes to the sultan for three years, becomes his slave.

The resident, Mr. Willer is, I am told, exerting himself greatly for the abolition of this cruel and unjust practice.

Another evil that in its consequence is even greater, as it affects not merely individuals, but whole nations, is the use of opium; but this evil the Dutch government does not attempt to suppress. On the contrary, it uses every means in its power to increase it.

Wonderful enough it is to see European governments founding colonies, subjecting whole countries for the sake of diffusing civilisation and Christianity, and at the same time doing all in their power to encourage their subjects in vices by which every principle of Christianity or civilisation is opposed. Why do they not discourage a practice which causes the destruction of thousands — nay, millions — of miserable infatuated creatures in every country where it prevails? Why, but because of the miserable gain, because this vice is the most productive source of revenue?

What shall we say to the war declared by the English against the Emperor of China, who was doing his best to guard his subjects from this poison, by prohibiting the importation of opium?

How can we ask uncivilised nations to respect our religion, when we let them see that it does not restrain us from the most unprincipled and shameful grasping, and that a sufficient amount of profit will reconcile us to any proceeding however flagitious?

One evening I paid a visit to the Sise houses in the Chinese quarter, where opium is smoked. The smokers sat or lay upon mats, and had at their side small lamps to light their pipes; and I could not help noticing how some who seemed to have nothing else

of sense or consciousness left, were careful to scrape the last atom of opium adhering to the leaf on which it had been placed. That horrible pictures are to be seen at these places it is scarcely necessary to say. Here is a creature stupified and incapable of speech, making a faint attempt to rise and drag himself home, but sinking powerless on the threshold; another is already lying senseless and lifeless, stretched upon his mat, unconscious that he has any home. There sits one with hollow cheeks, fixed eyes, trembling in every limb, the very picture of misery, for he has now no more money with which to attain to this enviable condition, and smoke himself into idiotcy. In some the opium has for a time an exhilarating effect, and they chatter and laugh under its influence till they fall back exhausted; but even then, they say, rejoice in delightful dreams.

Those who have once accustomed themselves to this poison cannot live without it; they can neither work nor think until they have inhaled another momentary supply of life from the terrible drug.

To my astonishment I found in the opium houses some women, who were, I was told, just as passionate smokers as the men.

A picul of opium (125 pounds) costs in Singapore 1200 Spanish dollars, but the government farms out

the right of sale at so high a rate that it makes six or eight hundred per cent. profit.

The greater part of the revenue of the Dutch government in Borneo is derived from this opium farming, and it was mentioned to me with high satisfaction that the consumption of opium was yearly on the increase. In Pontianah the revenue from it amounted in the year 1831 to about 116,000 rupees; in Sambas to 130,000; in Java it is said to have reached the enormous sum of ten millions,—more than the amount of all other taxes and duties put together.

My time during my stay at Pontianah was chiefly employed, in defiance of heat and morasses, in rambles in search of insects and reptiles, and I used to take a sort of childish pleasure on these occasions in every day crossing the equator on foot, as Pontianah lies scarcely a mile from it.

One morning while I was here I had a great fright. We were sitting quite comfortably at breakfast, when we suddenly heard a terrible screaming and running about before the house, and on stepping out into the gallery we saw a servant of the police with a drawn sword running across the street, and heard at the same time from the flying people the terrible cry, "*Amok, Amok!*" We rushed back into

our dwelling instantly, and shut and locked all the doors and windows.

"Amok" is a kind of raving madness, to which the Malays, not only in Borneo, but also throughout the Indian Archipelago, are occasionally subject. It seizes on them quite suddenly, and awakens the most vehement and irresistible desire for human blood; persons under its horrible influence rush out furiously and attack and kill whoever they meet, were it their own wives and children, and they have to be cut down or shot like wild beasts. It is said that this frenzy sometimes originates in jealousy, but it seldom attacks any but opium smokers.

This time we escaped with the fright, for it turned out that there was after all no "amok" about, but only three criminals escaped from the neighbouring prison, where they had been confined for heavy offences.

From Pontianah I wished to go through the heart of the country to Banjarmassing, another Dutch settlement, but as this would be a journey of two or three months, I thought it better not to undertake it alone, without any knowledge of the Dyak language. I looked out therefore for a faithful confidential servant or guide, but there was none to be found who would risk this certainly rather dangerous undertaking, so I had to give up my plan, and had

no choice left but to go to Batavia, and there look for an opportunity of getting to Australia. This was much against my will, for I knew how dear living is in Batavia, and travelling in Java generally, and that therefore I should have to leave that beautiful country as quickly as possible. Besides this, the Dutch themselves gave me no very favourable account of their country people there, and did not even offer me letters to them, though one of them had a relative, and others friends of their youth, there. I was the more struck with this because the English invariably, without the smallest solicitation on my part, had offered me every facility, and done whatever they possibly could, to render my travels agreeable. But, as I have said, I had no choice; and after I had staid at Pontianah longer than I had intended, I engaged a place in an Arabian vessel that was about to sail in a few days for Batavia.

During these few days, however, I had the pleasure of becoming acquainted with the resident, Mr. Willer, who returned from there before I started. I took the more interest in this gentleman, not only because he was the author of a very complete work on the Battakers of Sumatra, and the Alforas of Ceram, but for the efforts he had made to obtain the abolition of the debtor-slavery before mentioned.

I had also personal experience of the kindness of his disposition; for as it happened that he knew the captain of the Arabian vessel in which I had taken my place to be a worthless fellow, he would not suffer me to sail with him, but offered me an abode in his own house for all the time I might be detained, and undertook himself the care of my further progress. As it happened, however, a Dutch vessel arrived very soon after, and he engaged for me in this a passage to Batavia; and I had by this means the advantage of seeing a little more of Borneo, for this vessel was going to touch at Sambas.

On the 6th of April I left Pontianah in a government boat early in the morning, and by noon was on board the "Christian Huigens."

I found the ship in a great bustle, for her freight consisted of a transport of troops; — 120 soldiers, 46 women, and about a dozen of children. Among the soldiers were thirty Europeans, but the remainder, as well as the women, were all natives of Java, and I am sorry to have to add, that there was much more to object to in the behaviour of the Europeans than in that of their more uncivilised brethren. I thanked God that I had no daughter or young girl with me, for I should have had to keep her locked up in her cabin. Among the half-naked Dyak

savages I never saw anything that need have offended a really innocent and modest woman; but sorrowfully I must declare, that as far as I have seen the Christians of these countries, whether they call themselves Catholic or Protestant, they are far more immoral in their conduct than the Mahommedans and heathens. The officers of these troops even declared to me that they much preferred the natives as soldiers; that they were more orderly and manageable, more attentive to their duty, and far less given to drunkenness. At least one third of the Dutch troops in the Indian Archipelago consists of natives, amongst whom the *Madarese* (from the island of Madara, belonging to Java) are most distinguished for valour.

We reached the roadstead of Sambas on the 8th of April, and came to anchor before the entrance to the river, after a sail of 80 miles. During this short voyage we had never lost sight of land, but had views either of Borneo itself, or of the islands and islets which are here numerous. They were all mountainous, and covered with thick woods.

At the mouth of the Sambas there lies on a hill, 150 feet high, a small fort, named Fort *Sorg*, in memory of a Colonel Sorg, who here died of the wounds he had received in a fight with the Chinese

of Mandora. The commandant of the fort, Captain Van Houten, was kind enough to take charge of me until a boat should come from Sambas to fetch me; a kindness that was so much the greater as his dwelling consisted only of two little rooms.

I never saw so deplorable a little fort; it contained only a few low huts thatched with leaves, that just served to shelter two officers, the surgeon, and the soldiers. They said it had been erected in the greatest haste, when the Chinese at Mandora revolted and refused any longer to acknowledge the authority of the Dutch or pay their opium taxes. Three regular battles took place in the plain that lies at the foot of the hill Pameburg, on which the fort stands, and 4000 Chinese were defeated by 600 of the Dutch troops. The Chinese thereupon vowed obedience again; but their fidelity, as may be supposed under these circumstances, is not much to be relied on, and, in fact, further disturbances are expected. When once these disputes are fairly settled, a regular fort is to be built in a more healthy spot.

I remained for two days Mr. Van Houten's guest, and then left the fort for Sambas in a government boat, which the assistant resident Mr. Van Prehn

was so kind as to send for me. The distance is thirty-six miles, but I reached it in the evening, and was conducted to the house of the *Pangerang-rato*, a dignitary who, like the *Panam-bahan*, holds an intermediate rank between a rajah and a sultan.

Mr. Van Prehn had his own house crammed with officers, so that it was impossible for him to offer me a lodging.

The Pangerang received me in the divan, and here everything had such a European air, that I flattered myself I had got into good quarters. After about an hour's conversation I ventured to express a wish to go to my room, and I was then asked whether I would take anything to eat. I requested modestly that I might have a couple of boiled eggs, and then I went to my room, and waited till this banquet should make its appearance. I waited, however, a long time; but at last there came a man with a little bundle in one hand and a packet in the other, both of which he put down upon the table and unfolded. The bundle contained six eggs, the packet a pound of wax candles. This extremely simple mode of waiting upon me was the more droll as I had had several servants, as well as a female attendant, assigned me, who followed me at every step like my shadow; but no one of them offered to

bring me either a plate, or a knife, or bread, or salt. I thought if I asked for them I should have to wait as long as before, and for this I had not patience, for I longed exceedingly to go to bed; so I stretched out my hand, and took one of the eggs,—but, alas! it was cold and *unboiled!*

After my long day's travelling, therefore, I had to seek my couch without tasting a morsel.

My apartments consisted of a great hall, to which three steps led up; and a small part of it, separated by a partition, formed the bedroom, which had neither door nor window, and merely a little screen placed before the entrance. In the morning I could not, of course, remain in the dark hole, and went into the hall; but this had half a dozen doors and was accessible to all comers. In a tropical country there is never any want of idle people, least of all in a princely residence; and since I besides offered rather a remarkable spectacle — for no one of the people there had ever seen a European woman,— my great hall was constantly thronged; and every movement I made was watched by countless curious eyes, so that I really sometimes felt like an actress.

The next morning I felt, as may be supposed, no deficiency of appetite for breakfast, in fact, I was

ravenous; when, behold, it made its appearance, and it was nothing but literally tea, without milk or bread!

I really began now to be in an ill humour, and somewhat angry with those who had sent me to a house where I was treated thus, and yet would have to submit to everything, as I could speak to no one; but at length there arrived two gentlemen, Captain Van der Kapelle, and Dr. Enthoffen, to invite me in the name of all the officers to take possession of one of their cottages, and I need not say how gladly I accepted the invitation; and they took leave, promising to come for me in the evening.

In the meanwhile dinner-time came—a time of profound interest to me just now, for my fast had lasted for four-and-twenty hours; but as there were still no signs of preparing any meal, I took courage, and managed to signify that I desired to eat. Then the dinner was brought; rice boiled in water, half a wing of a fowl in such a fierce curry sauce that it burnt my mouth like a live coal, and two thin slices of meat, roasted to a cinder, swimming in very rancid cocoa-nut oil. Even with my appetite I could eat but little of this.

At four o'clock, however, a large basket of fruit was brought to me; but I dared not eat much, for

in these countries the fruit often disagrees seriously with Europeans.

At five came my two deliverers, and Captain Van der Kapelle took me to his own house, which he had been so obliging as to retire from and find another lodging for himself and his servant, in order to leave it quite free for my accommodation, quartering himself, in the meantime, with one of the other officers.

It must not be supposed, however, that because I had a whole house for my accommodation, I had many superfluous chambers; for in truth my palace consisted but of two, and was protected by a modest roof of leaves. It had been got up rather in a hurry, like many similar edifices that stood near, to afford a shelter to the officers who had been sent for, with their men, to strengthen the garrison of Sambas during the Chinese revolt. In time of peace the whole European population, soldiers excepted, does not exceed eleven persons, the assistant resident, and some other government functionaries.

Sambas contains some thousands of inhabitants, and resembles other Malay towns in appearance, except that most of the Chinese have built their houses upon rafts, which gives the river a very animated effect to the eye. It lies, like Pontianah, in

a large plain; but not in so marshy a one. In the background some mountains are visible, and before the house of the Assistant-Resident even a large meadow with avenues of trees.

Sambas possesses, besides the fort, a hospital with spacious apartments, very clean, good beds, and abundant stores of linen, medicines, and provisions; among the latter many hermetically-closed tin cases of vegetables, meats, and wine, both hock and claret. Natives of the country can be received into this hospital as well as Europeans; but they seldom make use of the privilege. They have a great dread of hospitals; for, as they see people often die in them, they think of them more as places where patients are killed than where they are cured; and when they are ill they greatly prefer quacking themselves.

To my great astonishment, I found that the Dutch here live on the same free terms with the native girls as the French do in Otaheite; and on this subject I might repeat, word for word, what I have said with reference to the latter. It struck me the more because neither at Singapore, Sarawak, nor any other of the English colonies, have I ever seen anything of the kind.

Although there is not much to be seen at Sambas,

my time passed quickly and agreeably enough. Mr. Van Prehn used to send me his boat every morning, with two Malays, who rowed me into the forest, and there accompanied me on my rambles. To tropical heat I was already accustomed, and also to the morasses. As for serpents and dangers of that kind I never thought about them. I am afraid, too, I must myself be classed among the destructive animals; for whatever attacked us "died the death," and neither insect, reptile, nor butterfly escaped our merciless scientific enthusiasm. In the afternoons I had employment enough to get my morning's victims into order, and in the evening I received visitors. I shall always remember with pleasure and gratitude the European residents in Sambas, especially Messrs Van der Kapelle, Enthoffen, and Van der Prehn. They gave me a much better account of their Batavian fellow-countrymen than my friends in Pontianah had done, and they furnished me with abundance of introductions; so that I looked forward to my journey thither with much better spirits.

On the 26th of April I left Sambas; but it was to return to Pontianah, whence the ship had to take a cargo of rattans and 50,000 cocoa-nuts, bought here for a shilling a hundred, to be carried to Batavia.

At the mouth of the river I had the pleasure of

meeting and breakfasting with Mr. and Mrs. Willer, who were coming to Sambas about the Chinese affair. At Fort Soy I met with the same cordial reception as before from Captain Van Houten, and he surprised me this time with a present of a collection of insects and a remarkably beautiful and rare plant.

On the 1st of May I went again on board; but we had four days' work to get over the sand-banks by which this roadstead is surrounded. On the first day the sailors caught a boa, which had probably been swept from the land by the tide. It came swimming straight towards our ship, regarding it doubtless as a safe place of refuge, and tried to come on board;—and so it did, but not till it had departed this life. It measured eighteen feet in length, and was eight inches in diameter.

The sailors pulled its skin off, and were then going to throw it into the sea; but I advised them not to do that, but to eat it. They laughed at me of course, and recommended me if I liked it to eat it myself, as I was quite welcome to their share. I immediately had a slice cut off and broiled, and began forthwith to eat it in their presence.*

* Those who have read the account of my First Journey Round the World will perhaps remember that at Singapore I went out with a tiger hunt, in which, instead of a tiger, we

When they saw that, the boldest among them stepped forward and asked me to let him taste it. I gave him a little bit, which he so much approved of, that the others soon followed, and they tasted so much, that at last I had the laugh on my side. It was then unanimously determined that the dead enemy should be eaten, and both soldiers and sailors thanked me for the good advice I had given them.

We had thirty soldiers on board, as well as some women and children; and among them were several sick, going to Batavia for change of air; and one of whom, a native of Java, died during the voyage. Immediately on the decease the body was laid near the mainmast; and after six hours it was wrapt in a mat, some stones were fastened to the head and feet, and it was laid on a plank and pushed into the sea. No one of his countrymen or comrades — nay, not even his wife — showed the slightest emotion on the occasion. Her eyes remained dry, and her features expressed the most perfect indifference.

I had remarked that when the body was wrapt in the mat some of the countrymen of the deceased put some coins in with it; and on my inquiring why

killed a boa. We gave it to some Chinese at a pepper plantation, who, after skinning, proceeded to cook and eat it. I tasted their curious dish, and found it by no means unpleasant.

this was done, I was told that, according to the popular belief, when some coins were given to a dead man thrown into the sea he did not come up again.

We did not drop our anchor in the roads of Pontianah till the 8th of May, and on the 22nd I again left it for the last time.

As this was my final farewell to Borneo, I will take this opportunity of saying a few words about the various races with whom I became acquainted there.

The Dyaks, who constitute by far the greater part of the population, pleased me best, as I have already said; and, indeed, not merely among the races of Borneo, but among all the races of the earth with whom I have come in contact. They — or at all events the free tribes — are of an uncorrupted, innocent, and noble character. The Malays, on the contrary, made a most unfavourable impression on me; and with respect to them I can but confirm what is said of them by most travellers. I believe, indeed, that the Malays of Borneo are the worst of their race; they cheat, lie, steal, treat the Dyaks who are subject to them with great harshness, and appear to have very little affection for their wives and children. They break the conjugal tie on the

slightest inducement; and I have known both men and women, hardly thirty years of age, who had been married six or eight times; though they will sometimes, after having made two or three other matrimonial experiments, come back to the first spouse.

The men, of course, as Mahommedans, are allowed by law to take several wives at a time.

Besides possessing the amiable qualities thus indicated, these Malays are slothful, indifferent to the feelings of others, and dirty beyond description. They do, indeed, according to the prescriptions of the Koran, perform certain ablutions; that is to say, they let the water run over them two or three times a day; but they do not wash off the impurities of the skin, or even dry themselves. Their food is poor, because they are too lazy to plant anything but rice. In every hut I stopped at in the course of my travels in Borneo I used to see both men and women lying half, nay whole days, gossiping, chewing siri, dozing, playing with the children, or doing nothing whatever, except perhaps gaping at me for hours together.

The Chinese are known to be in their country artful, deceitful, and cruel, and they do not change these qualities when they emigrate any more than

they do their customs or their clothing. They have, however, on the other hand, the merit of patient industry; they appear attached to their children; and probably for this very reason they do not so frequently change their wives.

The Chinese play in Borneo very much the part of the Jews in Poland or Hungary. All trades and mechanical arts are in their hands; they farm or work the mines, and also cultivate the land with incomparably more care than either Dyaks or Malays. Their food, as might be expected, is much better; they keep, as I have said, both pigs and poultry; and they raise vegetables and fruit. Tea stands with them in the place of water, and they drink frequently a kind of cream obtained from rice, and sweetened with sugar.

In general the Chinese may be regarded as the citizens of the country, the Malays as the peasants, and the dependent Dyaks as the slaves.

The description sometimes given of the hard lot of the women of Borneo I believe to be grossly exaggerated, especially with respect to the Dyaks. People who think they suffer hardship must know certainly little enough of the daily lives of large classes of women in many European countries. They have not seen, as I have, in Germany, a poor peasant

woman, heavily laden with provisions, setting off before daylight to walk to a distant market for the chance of selling her load, returning exhausted in the evening, and then having her children and her cows to attend to, to clean out the cow-house, and often to go in the fields afterwards to help the men with their work. They have not seen, I suppose, a poor washerwoman standing at her tub from three in the morning till seven or eight at night, till the skin is fairly rubbed off her fingers. They have not known how, in some European cities, women are continually carrying loads of wood up four or five pairs of stairs to the tops of the houses; they have never heard of needlewomen sitting twelve or fourteen hours a day, or more, in a dull close room, and scarcely even once a week getting to see the real light of day or the blessed sunshine! No! indeed, there is no harder lot than that of many and many a poor woman of Europe.

The Bornean women weave baskets and leafy screens for the walls of their huts, as well as look after their children and their little domestic concerns. They go sometimes into the fields, the Dyak women especially, at all events during the rice harvest, for some hours in the day, and they cut a basketful or so of rice, and carry it home; but what is

wanted for mats and for the huts is brought home by the men. The women sit in airy, shady, open rooms, working just as much as they please, for there is no one to urge them on, and taking it quite easy. If the piece of work is not done to-day it will be to-morrow or the day after. The children give them but little trouble; they run about naked, and do whatever they like, and when a woman has an infant at the breast she remains entirely at home. As for cookery, among the Chinese it is done by the men; and the Dyaks and Malays scarcely do any cookery but boiling rice. They have no cattle, and the pigs and poultry mostly find their own food. They have no saucepans to scour, no rooms to clean; for all kinds of dirt is dropped easily and conveniently through the trellised bamboo floor. As for washing and mending clothes, since they wear only one garment, and the children none, that does not fall very hard upon them; so that on the whole we can hardly I think ascribe — as some sympathising travellers have done — the early appearance of age in the Bornean women to their laborious lives. I rather think that their early marriages—as early not unfrequently as the eleventh or twelfth year—have more to do with this phenomenon.

CHAP. VI.

BATAVIA. — THINGS REMARKABLE. — CHINESE PLAY. — BUITENZORG. — PERFORMANCE AT THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S. — TYPANAS. — ASCENT OF THE PANGERANG. — PANDONG. — THE TEA PLANTATIONS. — COFFEE MILLS. — SULPHUR. — RETURN TO BATAVIA. — EXCURSION TO TANGERANG. — POPULAR RECREATIONS.

We had a favourable voyage of only seven days from Pontianah to Batavia, a distance of four hundred miles. From the roads you see little of the town, and nothing at all of the residence of the Europeans; only a wide, fruitful plain, surrounded by mountains. The passage from the roads to the town (three miles) has to be made in government boats, and a payment of three rupees is demanded for it. A ship captain may indeed use his own boats if he likes; but should he do so, he would have to pay all the same, and goods can only be landed in those belonging to the government. For the carriage that took me from the landing-place I had to pay three rupees more, and a half-rupee for every cooly;

so that altogether, including the donations, I did not get ashore under nine or ten rupees; about four times as much as it would have cost in Calcutta, which certainly no one ever reckoned a cheap place.

I alighted at the Hotel Neederland, but the next morning I received a visit from the Resident, Mr. Van Rees, to whom I had brought a letter of introduction from Sambas, and who invited me in the most cordial manner to his house, and sent for me the same day. His wife, a most pleasing and highly educated woman, was no less friendly; so that my entrance into Batavia was effected in a very easy and agreeable manner. The proprietor of the Hotel Neederland, too, a Mr. Hovesand, when he found who I was, refused to accept any payment, but politely begged me "not to spoil the pleasure he had in receiving so great a traveller" by insisting on making him pecuniary compensation.

Batavia has a population of 100,000 persons, amongst whom are 2,000 Europeans and 20,000 Chinese. The town is not handsome, the houses small and insignificant, and, especially in the Chinese quarter, crowded almost one upon another. The Europeans have merely their counting-houses in the town, and live in villas outside it. The principal spots inhabited by them are *Koningsplein*,

Waterloo-plain, *Cramot* and *Ryswick*. The two first have spacious and beautiful meadows, with avenues of trees about which the European residents ride and walk in the evenings. Waterloo-plain boasts also of a Waterloo Column, and here are the abodes of the officers, and the largest government buildings, and a court of justice, as well as the public schools and a theatre; besides other large edifices, amongst which the most remarkable are the Catholic and Protestant churches, the police court, the museum, the *Harmony*, — a kind of club, — and the military and Chinese hospitals: the post-office was not yet finished when I was there. The palace of the Governor-General is insignificant*; his actual residence, indeed, is at Buitenzorg, six and thirty miles from the town, and he only comes to Batavia for a few days in every month, in order to give audience, hold courts, and receive company at dinners and balls.

The houses of the Europeans are mostly modest in their style, only one story high; and they are wanting in the prettiest feature of houses in tropical countries, the terraces on the tops. They have, on the contrary,

* Java, including the small neighbouring island of Madura, has an extent of 47,000 square miles, and a population of nine and a half millions.

heavy roofs with deep projections, overhanging doors and windows, for the sake of shade. The interiors, however, have spacious and lofty halls and chambers, the floors neatly covered with matting; and they almost all stand in green meadows or beautiful flower gardens, which are not, as in Calcutta or Bombay, surrounded by thick walls, but by living hedges or elegant railings; and this makes walking among them extremely pleasant: for you seem to be always in a large well-kept park.

I had heard much of the luxurious style of living among the Europeans of Batavia, and perhaps I might have been struck by some things, had I not previously visited British India; but whoever has seen the buildings, equipages, dinners, and so forth, in Calcutta, can hardly be much struck with anything of the kind anywhere else.

The taste of the Batavian grandees in the dress of their attendants certainly did strike me, but not exactly with admiration. I should not have thought the costume of European livery servants so beautiful as to be worth transplanting to this distant quarter; but they, it seems, do. In some of the first houses I saw lacqueys in richly laced livery coats and gorgeous breeches, but at the same time with bare feet, and the handkerchief wrapped round the head which

is characteristic of their country. When, too, as was sometimes the case, the dark-brown face and wrapped-up head was finished off with a European footman's livery hat, the effect was such as even to endanger one's gravity. The poor fellows really looked like dressed up ourang-outangs. The mode of life of the Europeans here is much the same as in British India; and everywhere you find the same succession of dinners and entertainments, in which people who have nothing to do get others to come and help them.

The ladies wear all the morning the sarang and jacket of the natives, but in the evening appear in European full dress; and the afternoons are always devoted to sleep.

Batavia is said to have been in former days very unhealthy, but it is less so at present than it used to be, as many of the marshes have been drained. The Dutch, especially the men, seem to bear the climate better than the English do; and I saw several gentlemen who had lived fifteen or twenty years uninterruptedly in Java, and yet looked as fresh and healthy as if they had just left Europe. The women do not look so strong; but here, too, extremely early marriages are customary, so much so, indeed, that the government has thought it necessary to interfere,

and prohibit the marriage of girls of European families *under the age of fifteen.*

The people do not so often send their children to Europe as the Anglo-Indians do; indeed, most of the girls are brought up entirely in the country; but young men who have any hopes of obtaining important official appointments, are obliged to be sent to Europe, as they would not otherwise be eligible, even though they should possess in perfection every kind of knowledge likely to be serviceable in this country.

With respect to the healthiness of the climate of Java, I have great doubts whether it is really superior to British India; the difference may very likely be attributable to the greater quantity of strong drinks consumed in the latter. Living is at least one-fifth, if not one-fourth, more expensive here than in Calcutta.

Slavery unfortunately exists in Java, though it does not appear in its worst form. No owner is allowed to punish a slave, and the one is as free to lay a complaint as the other. The slave receives, besides his entire maintenance, a trifle every month to buy siri. No new slave can be imported, but the children of slave parents remain in slavery; and this law gives occasion to frequent frauds and crimes,

especially among the Chinese, for when a child of a slave dies, they frequently contrive to substitute for it some orphan of free parents, to make themselves amends for the loss.

A healthy slave, who has no other recommendation than his bodily strength, costs about 400 rupees; a cook, male or female, from 600 to 800.

To the honour of the Dutch I must mention that it is very common for them to give their slaves their freedom, and that not only when they leave India, but solely from motives of philanthropy. Mr. and Mrs. Van Rees, for instance, on the 1st of June in this year, set the whole of their slaves free; but no one of them left the house, they all begged to be allowed to remain. The same benevolent action was performed by the widow of the Resident Overhand; and in that case also the emancipated slaves remained in her service. It was in the company of the above mentioned gentleman I visited the various public institutions of the place. We began with the Chinese hospital, which was built with Chinese money; that is to say, with the produce of a small tax levied on them for that purpose by the Dutch government. The sum was found in time considerable enough for the erection of this fine building, which is provided with European doctors, and native nurses and at-

tendants; it has also a department devoted to the care of the insane. When I saw it there were sixty-eight patients of this class, and 147 others. We went into two of the wards, and on this occasion I could not help admiring the kindheartedness of Mr. Van Rees. He went up to the beds, even of those affected with eruptive diseases, who had an indescribably disgusting appearance, and whose breath and surrounding atmosphere must have been dangerous, asking how they were, and speaking some kind and consolatory words to each. Children with tumours and cutaneous affections he patted on the cheeks, and laughed and joked with like an affectionate father. I must own, to my shame, that I kept myself several yards off, and that I should have found it hard to prevail on myself to follow his noble example.

This hospital is the most complete that I have ever seen; a patient could not be better cared for in a well arranged private house. The beds are excellent, the apartments airy and beautifully clean. The patients, both sick and convalescent, are clothed till they leave the house in dazzlingly white garments. When a sick person is brought in, his entire clothing is taken from him and kept till the day of his departure. The officers of the institution

have handsome rooms in a quite separate part of the building.

We arrived in such good time in the morning that we witnessed the distribution of the breakfast. The Europeans got good coffee, with sugar and milk, and beautiful white bread. The natives prefer living in their own fashion, and they received rice, vegetables, fish, meat, &c. We were taken into the bath and store rooms, in which were most ample stocks of body and house linen, stores of fine fresh provisions, beverages of various kinds, and all sorts of surgical instruments. In one of the rooms were parts of the human body which had been attacked by any peculiar disease, preserved in spirits; and here I noticed also the skelcton of a sailor, who, after he had completely broken his backbone in falling from the top of a mast, had been kept alive for six weeks by the care and skill of Dr. Enthoffen, whom I had become acquainted with in Sambas.

At this hospital native young men, as well as girls and women, are instructed in various branches of medical science. The former are qualified to become assistants to the medical men; they are taught the structure of the human body, and the mode of setting fractured limbs, bleeding, &c.; and they are often sent into parts of the interior country, where

no other medical assistance can be obtained. The girls and women are instructed in midwifery. Some of the young people were questioned in my presence on various points, and they gave with little hesitation very correct answers, and could name all the parts of the skeleton that stood in their room, and explain their structure. The feminine pupils were no less well informed; and this surprised and pleased me still more, as women and girls in these countries are never accustomed to learn anything. During the time they are receiving instruction in the hospital (two years), they are kept closely secluded; they never leave the premises, and are allowed to receive only female visitors. The young men are allowed to go out for some hours every day, but it does not appear that they ever abuse the privilege. They are generally industrious and quick of comprehension.

The museum contains, with the exception of specimens of minerals and many idols from Bali, nothing that is very remarkable, for it is in this country so very difficult to preserve specimens of quadrupeds, reptiles, and insects, that they are mostly sent to Holland.

The governmental buildings in Waterloo-Place contain a large Hall of Session, with portraits of all

the Dutch governors-general; but I visited it chiefly for the sake of seeing a collection of drawings by a countryman of mine (Mr. Wilsau, of Vienna) of the magnificent Hindoo temples in the interior of Java. The sight of these drawings awakened in me the liveliest desire to see the originals; but, alas! the expenses of travelling in Java were far too heavy for my slender means.

The prisons of Batavia I found incomparably better kept than ours in Europe. The rooms are all airy and clean, and the prisoners can enjoy the open air and sunshine in a small garden attached to it. Twice a day, they have a large portion of rice with fish, and vegetables and meat twice a week. They are not fettered, nor even deprived of their beloved siri; and I doubt if anywhere else criminals are treated with so much indulgence. To what extent this may be desirable, is a question I need not enter upon here.

I did not enter the theatre; for, as my wardrobe was arranged merely for travelling, I was by no means fit to make my appearance in the full blaze of European finery. I did not feel this as any great privation; for there was not much pleasure in seeing an old, well-known European play, or an opera that I knew by heart, in this distant part of the world,

where it must necessarily be given in very inferior style. I had far more curiosity to see a Chinese theatrical performance, which the Governor, who was unwearied in his kind attention to me, induced the Chinese *major** to get up in my honour.

This major, like most wealthy Chinese, both here and in their native country, kept his own dancing-girls, who are also actresses, and undertake to represent the male as well as female characters. The theatre was a wooden booth, put up opposite the major's house, in the street, so that every passer-by could partake of the amusement; and we ourselves witnessed it from the balcony of one of the windows of the house.

The piece was played by six actresses; and as there were always officers or soldiers on the stage, I presumed it was something of a warlike nature. Besides these heroes, there appeared two servants, who frequently mourned and wept, but what I admired most in the whole affair, was the terrific combats, sometimes of two, sometimes of four, warriors. They screamed the words in a loud, harsh, monotonous voice, without any attempt to express feeling; their gestures were anything but graceful, and

* The chief of the Chinese in Batavia bears this title.

not always such as one liked to see — considering that the warriors were young ladies; and when they marched, they drew up their feet as high as they could in their trowsers, and set them down again with a thundering tramp, that one certainly did not expect under those circumstances. Their dresses were extremely rich, being made of heavy silk stuff, with embroideries and costly gold fringe, but very tasteless as to the form. They consisted of long petticoats with wide sleeves and short trowsers.

The piece was in four acts, but the last three were so exactly like each other, that one might have thought the actors were constantly repeating the same.

When the play was over we were led to a table spread with "all the delicacies of the season" (in Chinese estimation), including the favourite *trip-pang*, and the still more delicious birds'-nests, both of which are salt, have a strongly spiced taste, and would assuredly not tempt a European palate to excess.

Only a few days had passed since my arrival in Batavia when I received an invitation to Buitenzorg, to the Governor-General's, Mr. Deimar van Twist; and I acknowledge these civilities with so much the more thankfulness from their coming really as a sur-

prise to me, after the very unfavourable account I had had of the Dutch in Batavia.

On the 1st of June I went to Buitenzorg in company with Mr. Rees. The roads were very fine, and, as we found post-horses* ready at every stage, we did the thirty-five paals (about as many English miles) in three hours. The farther you go from the town the more charming becomes the country, the mountain-chain appears more distinctly, and summits of from 6000 to 10,000 feet high rise majestically out of it. The most prominent are the Pangerang, of 9600, and the Gedé, of 9000 feet. Buitenzorg itself lies 800 feet above the level of the sea.

The palace of the Governor-General is a stately building, consisting of a centre and two wings; it lies on a magnificent well-watered meadow, shaded by immense far-spreading banyan trees; troops of deer were straying about it, and behind stretched the extensive botanical garden.

As I was not to be presented till eight o'clock in the evening (just before dinner), I had plenty of time to see the grounds, which are very large, and laid

* When post-horses are wanted in Java it is always necessary to send notice beforehand.

out with great taste. Beautiful parterres of flowers alternate with groves and lawns, and thickets, and bright clear water glitters through the fresh green leaves. The paths and roads are kept in the most beautiful order, and cross each other in every direction, while elegant seats offer themselves for repose to the weary. Among the plants and trees there are some rare and valuable specimens. Mr. Tresmann, the superintendent of the garden, pointed out especially a plantation of vanilla, a climbing plant, and two delicate exotics, both of which had been lately introduced from America. With the vanilla the climate seemed to agree extremely well, and its branches were hanging down loaded with large juicy pods. These are cut off in a green state, and dried first in the sun, and then in the air, until they are quite shrivelled and have turned black. Mr. Tresmann presented some to me, which were equal to the finest I have ever seen in the West Indies. The China plants do not succeed quite so well; some were already dead, and the living looked in a rather languishing condition.

In the evening I was presented to the Governor-General and his lady, and the former took me in to dinner. I had heard from every one that this gentleman was extremely serious and taciturn; but

though his countenance had certainly at first a deeply serious and thoughtful expression, I found him by no means sparing of his words, and even the seriousness gave way to a pleasant tranquil cheerfulness. Nothing could be more kind and engaging than his manners and those of his lady towards myself. I passed three days with them in Buitenzorg, and they were continually making parties to show me all that was best worth seeing in the neighbourhood, especially the cochineal plantations of the Count van der Bosch, and the swallow grottoes, from which the Chinese procure the costly dainty of swallows' nests.

The estate of Count van der Bosch, *Pondeh-Gédé*, may be regarded in every respect as a model farm. The Count is an intelligent and zealous agriculturist, and exerts himself particularly to bring this branch of his rural economy to perfection; but the cochineal plantations constitute only a small part of the land he has under cultivation, as he also raises rice, sugar, coffee, and so forth.

For me, the cochineal plantations had the most interest, and I made the longest stay in them, to which I was the more inclined, as the director, Mr. Meyer, himself conducted me through them and explained everything.

The cochineal plant, or nopal, a plant of the cactus tribe, was, it seems, brought here only twenty-four years ago, from one of the Spanish West India possessions. Of the many insects brought with it, two only reached Java alive, but fortunately they were of different sexes. At what a rapid rate these creatures are propagated may be imagined when it is stated that Java has now for several years past been exporting from 150,000 to 200,000 *pounds* of them annually; and on repeated trial, it has been found that 33,000 of the largest sort go to a pound.

In beginning a nopal plantation, healthy leaves or plants are placed with the lower part in the ground, and in the course of a year a little stem is formed with several leaves upon it. In the third year the plant is fit to receive its insect population. To effect this, a little bag is made of cactus leaves, five or six cochineal insects placed in it, and it is then fastened with a thorn under one of the leaves of the nopal plant. One of these plants generally has as much as 300 leaves, but not more than seventy or eighty of the bags of insects are placed on each. In the western part of Java the cultivator is very content if on the average every four plants will yield a pound of the living cochineal insect, but in

the east of the island the same quantity is usually obtained from three.

When the plants are fully peopled, they are either left open, or covered with a sort of roof of leaves. In the first case, the propagation only goes on as long as the dry weather lasts, but when the plants are sheltered, it may go on nearly the whole year. According to the common course, the rainy season may be considered to be over in the month of April; but in the west of Java, where even in the good time of the year it often rains, plants which have been left uncovered sometimes have to be peopled from six to nine times with the insect, before a good harvest is obtained.

As soon as the insect (*Coccus cacti*) has produced its progeny, it dies, and the newborn ones crawl about on the leaves, fasten upon some place, and remain there without moving any more; and when the insects are taken from the plant, they are dried in rooms heated to 165° or 175° of Fahrenheit.

These drying rooms are heated by means of iron tubes, and the moist vapour which arises is let out at an opening in the wall. A hundred pounds of the fresh insects do not yield much more than thirty pounds when dried, besides three pounds of dust. This fine dust, in which the insect is enveloped,

appears to afford it some protection against rain. It has a silvery-grey colour, but when this is gently rubbed off, the insect beneath appears black.

The price of cochineal has been falling very much in these latter years, and the Dutch factory only pays two rupees a pound for the best kind, and eighty-five *doits* (about sevenpence) for the refuse,—the expense of packing and transport to the place of embarkation included.

The great Swallow Grotto, in which thousands of these birds build their nests, lies about twelve miles from Buitenzorg, and is farmed along with the adjacent lands by a Chinese, who pays for both 100,000 rupees a year. The farmer led us himself into the grotto, which is very difficult of access. We had guides, torch-bearers, ladders, and so forth with us, but could not, nevertheless, penetrate far into the interior. Some nests were found, however, which were presented to me; they were of a whitish colour, with some feathers intermixed, and so small that I can hardly understand how a bird of the size of an ordinary swallow could find room in them for itself, not to speak of its young family. It is conjectured that they are made of a kind of sea-weed, as these swallows always build in caves and grottos at no

great distance from the sea, not, at all events, more than thirty or forty miles inland.

The *harvest* of nests is reaped every three months; and they are then carefully cleansed from the feathers and dried in the air. The whiter, and freer from feathers they are, the higher price they fetch; but it is not always possible to purify them entirely from the mixture of feathers, as they are so closely interwoven and amalgamated with the seaweed. These extraordinary dainties cost in Java from 400 to 700 pounds the picul. Three nests are reckoned to an ounce, and, if purchased singly, they cost on the spot from one to two rupees a piece. The farmer of these grottos reaps annually about twelve piculs of nests.

The Governor-General gave me the pleasant surprise of ordering post-horses for me to Bandong, the seat of the Resident of Preang—a great favour, I must observe, which is shown to very few.

On the 11th of June I left Buitenzorg, but only to go a distance of ten miles, as I was to stop at the house of a family of the name of Back, where I passed two most pleasant days. They did everything that was possible to make my stay agreeable; and when they discovered my entomological propen-

sities the whole family assisted me in my researches. My hearty thanks to them and my other friends in Java, whose kindness and sympathy I shall never forget. On the 13th I went on ten or twelve miles farther to Typanas, a summer house of the Governor-General's. The way led over the *Mega-Mendango*, a mountain almost 5000 feet high; and, nearly at its summit, about a quarter of a mile from the road, lay a small lake in the midst of fine woods, and filling the crater of an extinct volcano. It is not more than a quarter of a mile in diameter; but high precipitous walls of rock rise round it, so that it is only accessible at one point, where the rock has been cleft by nature. These rocky walls are clothed to their very tops with a mantle of the richest green, and covered by fine trees. The water of the lake looks very dark; but this may proceed merely from the deep shadow of the surrounding woods.

The prospect from the Mega-Mendango is one of the most beautiful in Java. On one side you have majestic mountains, behind you the wide richly cultivated plain of Buitenzorg, and Batavia; before you the Residence of Preang, varied by ranges of hills, groups of rocks, and detached mountains, and one of the most fertile and best cultivated parts of Java,—

which is saying much, for over the whole island the richness of the culture vies with the lavish prodigality of nature.

Preparations had been made for my reception in the Governor's summer house at Typanas, a place that lies 3400 feet above the sea-level, and possesses a half European climate. I found chimneys in the rooms and even our German stoves, and in the extensive gardens the fruits and vegetables of Europe.

From here I was to ascend the Pangerang, a mountain nearly 10,000 feet high; but the ascent is so easy that you can ride almost to the top There are two stations on the way, that is to say two wooden cottages, where you stop to let your horses rest, or exchange the tired for fresh ones; and there is a third cottage only 150 feet below the summit, which has been erected for the convenience of the botanical gardeners of Buitenzorg and Typanas, who come to visit plantations made on various parts of the mountain.

I found fresh horses ready at each station, and in four hours reached the summit, where a flag-staff has been erected.

Unfortunately I enjoyed no fine prospect, for all the country below was veiled in mist; so that I had

to go down again in a great measure without my errand.

In descending, I halted at one of the cottages and was refreshed by strawberries, of which there are here large plantations.

The cottage, which was in rather a decaying condition, contained one large room and three small ones; and of furniture there was no superfluity. There were two very shaky tables and three chairs in the grand saloon; and in the bedrooms the beds were made only with moss; but there was a small iron stove which I saw with great satisfaction, and which did me good service, especially in the evenings, as the thermometer had fallen to 44° Fahrenheit. Of food and drink, bed-linen, &c., there was great abundance, as a most liberal supply had been sent on for me; so that here, in the midst of primeval forests, on the top of a mountain almost 10,000 feet high, I lived as luxuriously as in Batavia itself.

The entire mountain is thickly wooded, with the exception of an area of about 100 feet at the top, which is bare. The mountain yields some fine specimens of ferns, which, near the summit, form trees of twenty feet high. All the trees are clothed with an astonishingly thick moss, and all around me was beautiful and magnificent; but still there was

wanting the great charm of a clear sky, for the absence of which nothing can entirely make amends. I went up full six times to the top of the mountain, but every time returned disappointed. In the intervals I loitered into the woods, and discovered many traces of the rhinoceros, but not the animal itself, for they fly the neighbourhood of man; and it is a rare thing, even to the hunters, to surprise one.

From the top of the Pangerang I could see completely over the crater of the neighbouring Gedé,—and, indeed, the two mountains are so closely connected, that they might be regarded as a single one with a double summit. The crater lay only 600 or 700 feet below us; but we could not go to it, as there had been an eruption only a few days before, and thick clouds of smoke and glowing ashes were still rising out of it, which, at least at night, afforded us a very fine spectacle. Great part of the forest of the Pangerang was covered by ashes, and if we touched a bough, we brought down a regular shower of them upon our heads.

On the following morning I thought I would make one more visit to the summit, and my perseverance was at length rewarded, for the horizon was without a cloud, and I could gaze far over this mountain-world, — over countless peaks and sum-

mits, — over fallen-in craters, — over the rich plain of Buitenzorg, and Batavia, and the undulating slopes of Preang, and the ocean beyond, on both sides of the island. Can such a sight as that be bought too dearly? You live an age in such a moment, and feel your heart filled with sublime emotions, that seem to bear you up towards a nobler, better world.

On the following day, the 18th of June, I went on to Bandong, a distance of forty miles. Abounding as Java does in high mountains, I saw no fine river, but only brooks and torrents, that forced their way through ravines, and went foaming over masses of rock; so that it is only when much rain has fallen and the water is high they can be navigated, and then only with bamboo rafts. The cause of this deficiency in rivers is easily perceived in the shape of the island, which is so very narrow in proportion to its length.

I was surprised to see in this diligently cultivated country, where human labour can be so well employed, men performing the office of beasts of burden. All burdens are carried by the coolies, even should the distance be more than 100 miles; and they receive rather less than a farthing a mile for their labour. They carry eighty or ninety pounds each, by means of a pole resting on their

shoulders. There are resting stations for these porters, as for horses; and at every village a certain number of men must every day be ready to perform this service, at the above rate of payment; and, small as it is, you can trust any property to them without the slightest hesitation. The government goods only, coffee, sugar, salt, &c., are carried in carts drawn by buffaloes, but as the roads are generally very bad*, especially in rainy weather, and these carts often sink up to their axles in mud, you cannot give a pair of buffaloes a load of more than at the utmost eight piculs (1000 pounds) to draw. Men perform here, however, the services of animals of draught as well as of burden, as I had often occasion to see. At the first river I had to cross on this last day's journey, the road descended very abruptly to a bridge, and here the horses were taken out and men harnessed to the carriage in their places. The second river had no bridge at all, and then the men had to pull the carriage through the water, whilst horses and buffaloes walked in a leisurely manner by the side of them. It reminded me, by a curious contrast, of Iceland. Here, in Java, where food for horses and oxen is to be found in the greatest

* Near the post road, which runs all through Java, is another destined only for these carts.

abundance, man himself serves as a beast of burden; in Iceland, where you have almost to look for the grass with a telescope, people will not only not carry anything, but will hardly set foot to the ground themselves.

Travelling with post-horses in Java, you get on pretty quickly, rather too quickly sometimes; for I should occasionally, as in Russia, have given the drivers their fee with more pleasure if they had driven at a slower rate, particularly over the hills and mountains, where the roads were often full of holes or of great stones.

But exactly when we came to the top of a height, the horses were urged forward to their utmost speed by the cries and whips of the drivers; and we generally went over these places faster than on the finest plain, the poor animals arriving at the station breathless, trembling, and covered with sweat.

This was so painful to me that it spoiled the pleasure of the journey; but I tried in vain to induce the drivers to alter their plan. They assured me that it was unavoidable, that the horses of Java are so wilful and obstinate that they would otherwise stand stock still at the top of every hill. Perhaps this wilfulness is often only the result of their bad training; but

they will sometimes, when they are first put in, not move a step, and it is only with great trouble — that is to say by screaming at, and whipping them, that they can be made to set off. Sometimes also they will stand still in the middle of the way, and then, as a matter of course, they suffer for it. A society against cruelty to animals would be by no means out of place in Java.

Whether your carriage contains one person or several, you drive in the plain with four, and in the mountain region with six horses; and, besides the driver, every pair is provided with a runner, who does not indeed run the whole stage, but at every turn of the road, at bridges, in going up hill or down, he must always be at the side of his cattle. To get over very high hills, you have two or even four oxen harnessed in front of your six horses.

Posting is as dear in Java, or dearer, perhaps, than in any other country in the world. A stage of six or eight miles will cost, including the fee to the driver, from eight to twelve rupees. You have to give a trifle to every runner, to every ox-driver, and every time you get fresh horses, which may be two or three times between one station and another; so that though you give very small coins each time, your hand seems constantly in your pocket. It would be infinitely

more agreeable to have all these little sums reckoned and charged at once with the horses. To be sure most people have servants with them to take the trouble of these little matters off their hands, but I was mistress and servant in one, and had it all on my own.

In Bandong, situated at a height of rather more than 2000 feet, I was received with the utmost politeness by the assistant-resident, Mr. Van Gasbak, and I remained some days in order to visit a tea plantation, some coffee mills, and other noteworthy things.

On the way to the tea plantation we went a little out of our way to see the waterfall of *Tjurung-Tjecapandang*. We came to a fallen-in crater, which, like that of the mountain Meda-Mendango, had transformed itself into a lake; but it is much smaller, being under 150 feet in length, and in breadth still less. Into this lake there falls from a height of about seventy feet over a wall of rock, a slender, rather too slender, stream of water, which forces itself a passage, and then winds away prettily through the valley below. The walls of the crater are, like those before mentioned, overgrown with trees, and draperied with climbing plants.

This tea plantation is a very extensive one, and

stretches over many hills and slopes; and it is said that the present farmer, Mr. Bramsteed, possesses above a million of the shrubs. Tea, like coffee, flourishes best on hilly ground; the plants are kept low, as I have seen them in the neighbourhood of Canton; few being more than three or four feet in height; and ten of these, it is calculated, are required to produce one pound of tea. The mode of preparation is here very simple, and requires much less manipulation than in the Chinese factories. Instead of having every separate leaf of the green tea rolled as is done there, they here take a whole handful at once, give them a kind of light kneading, and then let them fall on a copper plate and dry by a gentle heat, in which process they fall apart of themselves, but certainly do not look so pretty and regular as by the true Chinese method.

The tea plantations of Java, as well as those of sugar and coffee, are the property of the government, but are usually farmed on a fifteen or twenty years' lease. The government gives the farmer the ground and the plantation ready formed, and secures to him a certain number of workmen at a fixed price. The rate of wages in this, as in all the Residences far off Batavia, is extraordinarily low. A day labourer has but ten doits a day, and a pound of rice, worth

about two more. For the plucking the tea, which is the chief part of the work, women and children are employed, who of course get still less. The farmer receives from the government seventy-five doits a pound for the tea, and his profit is considered to be at least a hundred per cent.

The Java tea is said to improve much by the voyage to Holland; but, after all, connoisseurs give the preference to that of China.

The method of gathering in the rice harvest in Java is rather curious; as the reapers make use of very little knives, with which they cut every ear separately in the middle of the stalk. The ears are then made up into little bundles and carried home on poles upon the people's shoulders, and every one who likes to help in the harvest may do so, and may keep one fifth part of what he reaps for himself.

My next object was to visit the coffee mills at Lembang, eight miles off, and with this I meant to unite an excursion to the sulphur crater at *Tangherbon-prank*, four miles further; but as I arrived at Lembang in rainy weather, and the visit to the crater had necessarily to be put off, I thankfully accepted the invitation of Mr. Plippeau, the proprietor of the coffee mills, to remain a few days in his house.

In order that this dull afternoon might not be

quite unemployed, Mr. Plippeau explained to me the treatment of the coffee from beginning to end; and I found that they make much more ceremony with it than they do in Brazil. The coffee is here received into great tanks of water as it comes from the trees, and left in them till the capsule or husk that contains the bean can be easily crushed. In this state it is put into wooden chests furnished with holes, through which the beans can pass, and squeezed and worked with the hand until they are quite loosened from the pod; after this the beans are laid out to dry, and then put into a great machine called a mill, where they are freed from a fine skin that envelopes them. Nothing remains after this but to sort them, in order to separate the inferior from the best, and then to pack them.

In Brazil the coffee is not thrown into water, but dried in the sun directly it comes from the tree, lightly pounded, by which operation the husk and the skin are loosened together; after which it is dried on copper plates over a gentle fire. At Lembang, the drying of the coffee is the great difficulty, as throughout the year there is more wet weather than dry, and the coffee, having been moistened through and through, requires long and uninterrupted heat to dry it.

The mills at Lembang are the largest in Java, and they yield annually 28,000 piculs of pure coffee.

The culture of coffee is, as I have already remarked, a government monopoly in Java, and so also is tea, sugar, and some other articles; but the Residence of Batavia is exempt from these restrictions, and every one may there cultivate and sell whatever commodities he pleases.

In the other residences the government generally keeps the coffee in its own hands, but farms out the culture of tea, &c., on condition that these articles shall be cultivated and delivered at fixed prices. In the districts which are well adapted to coffee, every peasant or owner of a cottage is obliged to plant 300 coffee trees, and keep this number always complete. During the first three years, when the trees produce nothing, the peasant gets nothing for his trouble; but in the following year he receives from eighty to a hundred doits for every picul of coffee in the husk which he delivers at the mill. The proprietor of the coffee mill is also paid by the government, and is said, like the tea-planter, to make a hundred per cent profit of his capital. Six piculs of coffee in the husk produce one of pure coffee. In districts where there is no mill, the peasant is obliged to cleanse the coffee himself, and the government pays

him six or seven copper guilders for every picul. But the peasantry is much oppressed on account of this coffee, as they often live fifteen or twenty miles from the coffee gardens, and, taking the year through, have generally to go to work at them two or three times in a month; and though they are provided with huts for shelter, they have everything else to find for themselves.

The Residence of Preang, on the whole the most fruitful of Java, is also the richest in coffee. Its hilly uplands — for it consists of an extensive plateau 200 feet above the level of the sea—are particularly fit for it, and I never saw anywhere coffee plantations in better order. It is calculated to contain sixty millions of coffee trees, of which thirty-five millions are under the immediate care of the Resident of Bandong. Three trees produce two pounds of pure coffee.

On the following morning I rode over to the sulphur crater, for which Mr. Plippeau was so good as to furnish me with horses and guides; and as every mile I went I got some addition to my party, either of horsemen or pedestrians, I had soon thirty persons in my train. It is a custom in Java, when any one to whom respect is to be paid passes through a village, for the magistrate and several of the inha-

bitants to turn out and accompany them a considerable piece of their way. This honour fell to my lot, of course on account of Mr. Phlippeau and the deputy-resident.

The mode in which the natives on the Preanger territory manifest their "high consideration" of superiors and Europeans is sometimes rather odd in its effect, as they go plump down upon the ground without minding whether they turn their faces, their sides, or their backs to you. If they are on horseback they alight, lead the horse on one side, and then crouch down by the side of it.

It was a tolerably long way to the crater, but we were able to come quite close up to it. It appeared to be between 200 and 300 feet deep, and the top about 400 feet in diameter; but the bottom was not visible. The walls are steep, and it is only possible to get down at one place, over loose stones, and not without danger. In the depth below columns of sulphureous vapour were rising in several places, and pure sulphur was lying all about. I scrambled down with considerable trouble; and near the hillocks of sulphur thrown up I heard a loud roaring noise, like that made by steam being let off from a locomotive; and columns of smoke, or rather steam, rushed up with much violence. It is possible

with care to go very near to them; only you must be sure to have the wind with you, or the suffocating sulphureous vapour would be driven in your face.

Several Europeans, as well as natives, had told me that the ground in the crater was hot enough to burn the soles of your shoes; but I laid my hand upon it, certainly in fifty places, and sometimes quite near the columns of vapour, without suffering any inconvenience, and brought back my soles quite uninjured.

Why will travellers always exaggerate and deceive each other, as according to my experience they constantly do? or is it my peculiar misfortune thus continually to observe and feel things differently from others?

A few years ago this crater threw up such a quantity of ashes, that the woods for a quarter of a mile round were killed; and the naked, charred, black trunks of the trees, which seemed to have been in a conflagration, formed the most abrupt contrast with the rich, blooming vegetation that encircled them, without the slightest intermediate gradation, like a garland.

I had seen several both active and extinct volcanic craters in Java; but I never observed in them any of the pure porous lava that I have seen

on Vesuvius, Etna, and the volcanoes of Iceland. Those of Java appear more frequently to vomit ashes, sand, and water, or stones.

Returning to Bandong, I found that Mr. Van Gasbak had procured for me a pretty amusement at the house of the *Regent*, who had ordered his dancing girls to execute, in my honour, the national dance, the bedogo.

A regent, I must explain, is a rajah or other native of high rank, who bears this title, and is associated with the Resident in his government, besides having a certain percentage out of the coffee, sugar, &c. Nothing of importance is ever ostensibly undertaken without his approbation; but I do not think his opinion is often found to differ much from that of the Dutch Resident.

The six dancing girls were becomingly dressed in closely fitting jackets without sleeves, silk sarangs embroidered with gold, reaching barely to the ankle, and trousers descending to the feet, which were bare. A purple sash encircled the waist, the ends of which hung down to the knee; and bosom, waist, wrists, and arms were adorned with gold ornaments. On their heads they had openwork helmets, which allowed the abundance of their rich black hair to be perceived; and you might have fancied you had a

group of Amazons before you, but that their faces unfortunately were of the true Malay type.

The dance consisted of three movements: the first very calm and simple; in the second the dancers seized plumes of ostrich and peacocks' feathers, which they waved about like swords, and fenced with them; and in the third they armed themselves with bows and arrows, and represented a regular combat, in which one half of the number was defeated, and the slain remained for some time lying on the field of battle. The music that accompanied the combat was very noisy and discordant; but on the defeat of the one party, a soft plaintive melody arose at some distance off. The whole performance was really pretty and expressive, and had nothing whatever offensive in it, — a negative kind of praise, certainly, but one which I am afraid would not always be given by an impartial spectator to our ballets. The only thing I did not quite like was that the dancers kept their eyes constantly fixed on the ground, a custom that I have noticed in those of most non-European nations, and which is meant, I rather think, to express profound respect for the spectators.

From Bandong I went back to Buitenzorg, availing myself of the kind invitation of the Governor to remain a few days more at his palace. I was

exceedingly indebted to this gentleman, not only for the uncommonly friendly reception I had in his house, but also because I have little doubt that I owed to that much of the distinction with which I was treated throughout the Dutch settlements, and the support and assistance given to my travelling plans.*

In Batavia I again went to the house of my amiable friends, Mr. and Mrs. Van Rees, and, while there, I was surprised by a very welcome visit from Colonel Steuerwold of the Dutch service, whom I had become acquainted with in 1848, in going from Gottenburg to Stockholm, and whose high character even more than his talents and knowledge made me proud of the attention he showed me, and which much exceeded that generally given to a mere travelling acquaintance.

A few days after my return, I went to Tangerang, a place about fifteen miles off, whither Mr. Van Rees had occasion to go on business, but had delayed till my return, in order to take me with him.

* The Governor-General of the Dutch Indian possessions, though he holds his office only for four or five years, has more power, while it lasts, than a constitutional king in Europe; and he has a very large salary, besides several palaces, summer residences, and landed estates.

He took this opportunity also of letting me see some of the popular recreations, — a dance, a burlesque play, some feats of skill by "a Hercules," and, alas! also a cockfight. The Dutch government has now strictly forbidden these brutal exhibitions, which were formerly the favourite diversion, and at the same time the ruin, of the lower classes. Many were so devoted to them that they attended to nothing else, and would forfeit house and land, and see wife and children perish, rather than renounce their horrid passion.

The dance I did not find very entertaining: six girls stamped about in a very awkward manner, within a very confined space, and at the same time favoured us with a kind of screaming song, in which certainly we had not to complain of any want of power in their voices. The play was much more amusing. I did not indeed understand what was said; on which ignorance, by-the-by, Mr. Van Rees said I was to be congratulated; but I admired the natural manner, the droll play of feature, and the eloquence of the principal characters, who, it seems, had no speeches prepared for them, but had to invent them on the spur of the moment. The female parts were here played by young men, by which the spectators were no losers, for there is nothing to choose between the

sexes in point of beauty. The young men looked just as well as the ladies would have done; indeed I should not have known the difference if I had not been told.

The close of the entertainment, the performance of the Hercules, was really curious in its way. He appeared with nothing on but a pair of drawers; and a cord was passed round his neck, and with this his hands and arms were so firmly tied behind him, that he could not make the smallest movement. He came to us to have the knots examined, and then he crept under a high covered basket, beneath which various garments were placed; and after the lapse of a few minutes the basket was lifted up and the Hercules made his appearance completely clothed in them; then he crept again under the basket and came out without them, but holding the cord with all its knots fast in his hand, and so forth. All this would of course have been nothing in a theatre, where assistance might have been given him; but this was in a meadow, where no assistance was possible. One of the gentlemen present offered him twenty-five rupees for his mystery, but he declined the offer.

On the following morning, the 7th of July, we were to have seen a sugar-mill on our way back to

Batavia, but it was unluckily not at work, although the sugar-canes all round were standing in ripest perfection. I never saw anywhere larger or richer sugar-fields than in Java; and the mills are said to bring a profit of two or three hundred per cent.

CHAP. VII.

SUMATRA. — ARRIVAL IN PADANG. — JOURNEY INTO THE INTERIOR. — FORT KOCH. — KOTTO-GODONG. — STRANGE LAWS. — MUARA SIPONGIE. — DISSUASION FROM THE JOURNEY. — THE BATTAKERS — THEIR CUSTOMS AND LAWS. — FAREWELL TO THE LAST EUROPEANS.

I HAD been cherishing for a long time the wish to make a voyage to Sumatra; but I found, on inquiry, that the expenses were far too great, being no less than 500 rupees there and back. Mr. Van Rees, however, gave me hopes that I might be able to get the passage on more reasonable terms; and only a few hours after our return from Tangerang, when he had driven into town, he wrote me a note, in which lay enclosed a ticket for the double voyage. It may be supposed how delighted I was with such a present. He had mentioned the matter, it appeared, among some German merchants settled in Batavia, and they had immediately determined to offer me this very acceptable compliment. I again tender my hearty thanks to these gentlemen.

and assure them that they procured for me one of the most interesting journeys I have ever made.

The steamer "Macassar" (120-horse power, Captain Bergner) was to sail the next day. My preparations were quickly made, and at six o'clock in the morning I went on board, still accompanied by my unwearied, kind friend, Mr. Van Rees.

We came in sight of the coast of Sumatra the same day, before we had lost sight of Java. Both islands are very mountainous, but the mountains of Java are higher and more varied in their outline.

July 10th. We lost the coast of Java this morning, and on Sumatra we could distinguish a threefold range of mountains. A beautiful smooth girdle of land extended from the sea to the foot of the mountain range, and both plain and mountain are richly wooded.

We were bound for Bencoolen, the chief place of the Residence of the same name; but the anchoring ground is not adapted for steamers, except in very calm weather; and since the weather did not favour us, we were compelled to run for Palu Bay, twelve miles off. The captain went overland to Bencoolen, and came back the next afternoon, when we concluded our voyage.

On the morning of the 13th of July we reached

Padang, the chief town of the Dutch settlements in Sumatra. Its situation is very beautiful. To the west lie pleasant hills and low mountains, one of which, called the Ape Hill, is pushed out into the sea, and only connected with the island by a narrow isthmus. Northward, at a distance of four or five miles, rises a higher mountain chain, and between it and the town stretches a lovely fertile plain.

Padang has a population of 27,000, and is the largest town in Sumatra, and the seat of the Governor, who inhabits a beautiful house called Wellhorn, about four miles from the town, among the mountains. Padang has no beauty of its own, but the dwellings and country houses of the Europeans lie near it in pretty gardens, overshadowed by cocoanut trees, in which the whole district much abounds. I alighted at the house of Major Koeling; but scarcely had the Governor, Mr. Van Swillen, heard of my arrival, than he came himself to invite me to his, to which I went accordingly the same day.

My intention was to stay only a short time at Padang itself, as I wished to visit the Highlands, as they are called, — *Benyol, Mandelling, Ankolla, the Great Toba, &c.*, — and to go among the wild cannibal Battakers. People tried to dissuade me from this plan, as they did from a similar one at Sarawak.

They told me that, in 1835, two missionaries, Messrs. Layman and Mansor, had been killed and eaten by the Battakers, and that no European could possibly venture among them without a military escort.* They advised me to content myself with the Dutch settlements, and not to expose myself to the danger of terminating my life in so horrible a manner. It was, however, precisely for the sake of becoming acquainted with these Battakers, — a people so little known to Europeans, — that I had chiefly desired to come to Sumatra; and as I thought it probable that the very weakness of my sex would be my protection, I determined not to listen to these warning voices.

On the 19th of July I began my journey on horseback, with a very clouded sky; and, exactly as it had happened to me at Sarawak, on the very first day I met with an obstacle that compelled me turn back. When, namely, I reached the banks of the river *Udjong-Karang*, I found that, in consequence of several days' rain, the country was flooded far and

* When, two years afterwards, I returned to Europe, I read in a newspaper that three French Missionaries had, in 1855, ventured into the Battaker country, only as far as Tapanolla (whilst I had been as far as the Great and Little Toba), and had there been killed and devoured by the cannibals, amidst festive dances and music.

wide; the bridge had been washed away in the night; there was no raft ready as a substitute, and I had nothing for it but to go back to Padang.

The next day I set forth again, but the sunshine was very watery, and in a short time I had a settled rain. I went on, however, two stages (twenty miles) to *Lubalong*. The distances in Sumatra are divided into stages, or military marches, of from eight to thirteen miles; and at each of these stations you find a little fort or some small building, in which a government officer resides, and where you can find shelter for the night. At some there are clerks or other subordinate persons, who will receive a stranger for payment.

When we were only six or eight miles from Padang the country began to look rather wild; the number of rice plantations decreased, and there was more forest and jungle. Considering the wildness of the country it appeared rather thickly peopled—mostly by Malays, who form the greater part of the population of Sumatra; and here also, as elsewhere, their houses were built on piles.

As in Java, all goods, coffee excepted, are carried by men, and on their heads; but coffee is transported by horses or buffaloes.

There are many huts on the road, near which are

stands, about five feet high, where the coolies can conveniently push their burdens from their heads and rest. The huts serve them also as houses of public entertainment; and they find in them tea, coffee (the latter an infusion from the leaves of the coffee-tree), boiled rice, and *qué-qué*, a kind of cake or bread; and they can pass the night at these huts if they desire it.

These coolies are usually as trustworthy as those of Java, though they receive just as little pay, namely, two doits and a half, or about a farthing, a mile. I only heard of one case in which they had, not indeed stolen any of the property confided to them, but caused the owner considerable damage.

A mineralogist had collected and sent to Padang several chests of minerals, and, as they were not locked, the coolies looked into them. Seeing nothing but stones, they thought they would make the matter a little easier to themselves. Stones were stones, and they would pitch these out, carry the chests empty, and when they got near Padang put some more stones in. They did so accordingly; and the unfortunate mineralogist did not discover the loss of his treasures till long afterwards, when he returned from his travels, and then it was irremediable.

In the larger villages I was struck by the appearance of open halls, built of wood, and with elegantly carved roofs, painted in gay colours. These, I was told, were for the rajahs to hold their courts in, and hear complaints; and in them also all important commercial affairs are settled; and they are provided with a kind of great drum, called taboo, which is beaten when on any occasion the people are required to assemble. These drums are from eight to fifteen feet long, and one end is covered with a skin, as much as three feet in diameter; the other end is smaller.

The diversion of cock-fighting is, it seems, allowed in Sumatra, and is no less in favour than on the neighbouring island. I met many men and boys going along with their fighting-cocks under their arms.

July 21*st.* I did not go far to-day — only ten miles, as far as *Kaju-Tanam.* The weather was delightfully pleasant, and the sun gave such a gentle warmth that I quite forgot how close I was to the equator. Some birds were singing, too, not indeed in the style of such finished musicians as they are in Europe, but very well for the tropics. Monkeys were chattering and jumping from bough to bough, and the country became finer and the mountains grander in their forms as we proceeded: the highest,

the *Singallang* and the *Merapi*, were as much as between 9000 and 10,000 feet.

I had bought no horses for this journey, for I was told the gentlemen to whom I was recommended for each day would be sure to furnish me both with horses and guides; and so it proved. But in this way I had often both guides and horses to change twice in one day, and as soon as I had got accustomed to the humours of one of my steeds I had to take a new one. Sometimes I got a beast that was so extremely lively as to kick out on all sides, and positively refuse to be mounted, so that they had to tie one of his fore legs and his nose together till I had got up, and then away we went, neck or nothing. I generally found it best to let them go on as fast as they liked at first, and felt pretty sure that they would get rid of their superfluous vivacity at the end of a mile or two.

I had arranged my journey so that I always started very early in the morning, and rode at least a stage, whether a short or a long one uninterruptedly; we mostly reached our destination by twelve o'clock, and then, after half an hour's rest, I set off on one of my insect and butterfly hunts.

At *Kaja-Tanam* I found in the comptroller, Mr. Barthelemy, who received me in a very friendly

manner, an enthusiastic ornithologist and bird collector. He accompanied me in my hunt, and promised besides to look for insects and reptiles in my absence, and have them ready for me on my return.

July 22nd. We went twenty miles to Fort de Koch, also called *Bahiet-tingi.* The first part of the way was very romantic: a fine road led through a ravine, called by the Dutch a *kluft*, enclosed by wooded hills and mountains; a forest stream burst foaming over the rocks and loose stones, whilst another, close to the road, formed a cascade over a cliff, sixty or seventy feet high. At the end of the ravine, the road rose in a spiral direction to a height of 3000 feet, and led to a lofty table land. I met long trains of horses and buffaloes, the latter harnessed to cars laden with coffee, which was being taken from Prianam to the sea-coast, where it would be shipped for Padang. The horses are here rather larger than those of Java, the buffaloes very large and heavy; but neither one kind nor the other has much strength or endurance. The horses not harnessed to cars can only be laden with a picul weight, and a pair of buffaloes will draw at most eight, and that only on very good roads. Neither packhorse nor buffalo will go with these loads more than

six miles at a time; and they require rest every fifth day.

Light as this labour appears to be, the animals do not live long. They are fed with grass, and with the marrow of the sago palm. A common horse costs about fifteen or twenty rupees, and a buffalo up to thirty; but the horses that come from the Battaker country, and which are much larger and stronger, will fetch higher prices, even up to 300 rupees.

Fort de Koch lies on a fine plateau of nearly 3000 feet in height; it has a charming prospect over wide valleys and majestic mountains, and enjoys a very moderate climate; — the mornings and evenings, indeed, are quite cool. On this table-land the vine prospers well.

At Fort de Koch I alighted at the house of the Resident of the *Agamer* territory, Colonel Van der Hardt, — a distinguished officer, who had been engaged in all the wars of Sumatra, from 1830 to 1849, and was the first to advance with his regiment into the Battaker country as far as the entrance to the valley *Silidong*, by the great Toba.* I had already become acquainted with this gentleman in Batavia, and he had also accompanied me to Padang.

* In the following year he was made Governor of Celebes.

He overwhelmed me with polite attentions of every kind, and immediately made a party to show me what was best worth seeing in the neighbourhood — the rich and beautiful campan, *Kotto-Godong;* which is the most elegant and opulent that I have ever seen, either in Sumatra, Java, or any of the Dutch East Indian possessions.

The style of building in the houses is curious and original: they are of wood, painted in bright colours, and very much longer than they are broad; and each end runs together into a peak, which rises above the central part, so as to give them more the appearance of ships than of houses.- The roofs are sometimes made in two or three slopes, each slope being provided with two peaks, and looking very much like a Turkish saddle. The front and side walls are decorated, often quite covered, with finely and elaborately carved arabesques. The houses stand upon piles; but these are invisible, being covered with bamboos or boards, and the whole effect is very peculiar and pretty.

The interior of these ornamental-looking houses consists of one large apartment, which takes in the whole length and three quarters of the breadth of the house; and at the extremity of it is a small raised compartment that looks as if it had been

added after the house was built, which is furnished with mats, carpets, cushions, &c., and is intended as a place of honour for the most distinguished woman present. The back of the house is divided into little rooms for the fires and sleeping places, but which are pitch dark, as the back wall of the house has no windows. Opposite every house stands a miniature one, carved and painted in the same style, which serves for the preservation of the store of rice. In each of these houses there only lives a single family, and not, as among the Dyaks, a whole tribe.

As the Rajah of the campan* had been informed beforehand of our coming, we found him and his family in their richest dresses. The sarangs of the ladies were of heavy silk, richly and elegantly embroidered with gold, and they showed us some that had cost as much as 500 rupees. Their jackets were of blue, red, or green silk, with gold borders; their headkerchiefs so heavy with gold, that they were not tied to, but merely laid on, the head. Some of these cost as much as six guineas apiece. The

* Every campan in the Dutch settlements has its own Rajah, who receives a small salary and undertakes that the community under his rule shall observe the laws and fulfil the orders of the government.

women weave their sarangs and headkerchiefs themselves; but the velvet, of course, they buy. The rajah's ladies wore round their wrists finely wrought gold bracelets, and on the little finger of the left hand some rings. Many had this finger decorated in still more striking style, namely, by a golden *nail* two inches long, which is fastened on like a ring, and is admired as a sign of wealth and *do-nothingness*.

The Malay chief priest came in grand state to pay his respects, and certainly he did astonish us with his finery. He wore a long robe of rose-coloured silk, and over it another of white gauze, trimmed with three broad flounces. The sleeves were also full trimmed with lace. To complete this costume, which any European lady might have gone to a ball in, this reverend personage had a man's white waistcoat and a belt, in which were stuck some superb weapons. He also had on a white turban, and over it a large lace veil, that fell down and half covered him. Altogether, I never saw such an absurd looking fellow; and when the lace veil was thrown back, and a young and beardless face appeared, I should certainly, had he not been announced as the high priest, have had considerable doubt whether we had before us a lady or a gentleman.

Besides the house of the Rajah, we visited some where we found the women and girls occupied with skilful gold-weaving; and then we went to a goldsmith's, who had really produced some beautiful things, and, to our great astonishment, merely with the help of a small anvil, some hammers, nails, and other trifles. His entire stock of tools could be put into a little box, and carried under his arm; so that, in case of need, he could set up his workshop anywhere.

The ordinary costume of the Malays in Sumatra, like those of Java, consists of the sarang and cabay, or *padgee*,—the only difference being that here they are worn of dark blue, nearly black, and in Java of gay colours. In the matter of beauty, or rather of ugliness, these Malays may fully vie with their brethren in Java and Borneo; they have the same broad faces, the same pale projecting jaws, and the same pointed black teeth.

Many of the quite young people seem to have lost some of their teeth, and to have gaps in their gums. The rich fill these with golden teeth,—not so much, however, for convenience as for decoration; and they only put them in on festive occasions. The women have the cartilages of their ears pierced only once; but every art is employed to enlarge the hole

as much as possible; and to effect this they stick in a rolled-up leaf or a piece of wood, and then replace it with a larger and a larger, until the opening is an inch wide. These holes in the ear are thought to be so handsome in themselves as scarcely to need the foreign aid of ornament; and are only on festal occasions further adorned with gold, silver, or brass rings, or the elegant simplicity of a rounded lump of wood.

One remarkable peculiarity of the Agamer district is, that the women possess many of what we are accustomed to consider the rights of the stronger sex, indeed, that the men often have to play the subordinate part, which would seem odd in any country in the world, but is more especially so in a Mohammedan one, where they will not allow us poor feminine creatures so much as a soul.

When, for example, a girl has reached a marriageable age, her mother begins to look out for a suitable bridegroom for her, and, when she has found one, goes and opens the negotiation with the gentleman's mother. The papas have no voice whatever in the matter, but the two ladies settle it entirely between themselves. When the day comes for the wedding, the mother of the bride goes and fetches the bridegroom, who then takes up his abode in the house of

his wife's parents, and becomes a member of her family. This does not, indeed, form any obstacle to his marrying another wife, only it must not be in the same campan; and a man who is the happy possessor of several wives has no settled home at all, but lives now in one campan, now in another.

A man never refuses to take the bride offered to him; but he can, if he pleases, leave her the next day, and this is a right the bride does not possess; she can only make her objections before marriage, and, even in this case, if the bargain has been completed, she must purchase her release with a part of her moveable goods, cattle, poultry, household utensils, or money.

A man can also divorce his wife at any subsequent period, without any other cause than his good pleasure, but a woman her husband only on proof of ill-treatment. Should the married pair repent of their separation, they may lawfully come together again without further ceremony, within the space of forty days; but after that time they must be married again by the priest. A divorced wife can marry again in three months and ten days.*

When a wife dies the husband inherits only half

* These laws concerning marriages, divorces, and re-unions, are the same among all the Malays.

of the goods belonging to her—except what she has expressly left him as a legacy; her children are her heirs and, if she has none, the children of her sister or other female relative. The man can inherit from his own race only in the female line,—from his mother or his female relatives; and his property goes not to his own children, but the children of his sister or nearest female relation.

To this singular law of inheritance the following occurrence is traditionally said to have given occasion, though it does not appear extremely clear what it should have to do with it.

A certain great prince, whose dominions lay far from the sea, dreamed for several successive nights that, in order to secure his fortune, it was necessary that he should build a great proa. The dream at the same time announced that his nearest blood relation would be easily able to launch it and send it to sea. The prince did as the dream commanded, and when the proa was finished, he sent to invite all his relations and the rajahs from all the country round to assist at the solemn launch. When all was ready, he called upon his eldest son, and ordered him to take the proa to sea; and the son exerted all his strength to push it off, but in vain, he could not move it from the spot; the prince called to one son

after another, but no one of them had any better success. Wrathfully then did his now not *serene* highness summon to him the son of his sister; and behold, the nephew shoved off the boat without the least difficulty, and carried it to the place of its destination,—and that is the whole story!

A peculiar kind of slavery exists in the Dutch settlements in Sumatra; it is limited to the period of ten years. The slaves all come from the island of Nias, and are either prisoners of war, debtors, or criminals, or it may be even free men who have been sold into slavery by the sultan of the island. Slaves, male and female, are sold at the fixed price of 100 rupees. The purchaser is compelled to feed and clothe them in a proper manner, and is not allowed to subject them to excessive labour. He must also give them a small sum every month for siri. In ten years' time they are free; but they seldom go back to their native country, for fear their illustrious sovereign should sell them over again. The Dutch government takes great care to prevent the ill treatment of slaves. A short time before my arrival at Padang, a woman who had ill-treated a slave, was sentenced to the well-deserved punishment of five years' imprisonment in the house of correction, and was moreover declared incapable of ever holding a

slave again, while the injured slave was set at liberty. Would to God that things were managed in this way in all slave-holding countries.

In almost every house here you see these Nias islanders; they are not, in my opinion, as ugly as the Malays, but the women are excessively little.

In the district of *Agam* a great deal of coffee is grown; and in the country best adapted to it, every head of a family is bound, as in Java, to plant and tend 300 trees. He must also deliver the coffee in a pure state in the magazines, which often lie ten or twelve miles from the plantations. The planter receives only seven copper guilders for his coffee; and for its transport from the magazines to the sea-shore, three doits, or a little more than a farthing, per mile. This business is usually farmed out.

In the year 1851, above 2,000,000 of pounds of coffee were produced here, which, considering the short time coffee has been cultivated, is very considerable. The government sells it by public auction, and it commonly brings about forty shillings the picul; and there is an export duty on it of twelve rupees for Holland, and six for other countries.

As Sumatra is much less known than Java, it may perhaps interest some of my readers to know

what are the chief productions exported from this island, and about what prices they fetch. I will here mention what they were in 1851: —

Coffee - - - -	at	20½ rupees the picul.
Rice - - - -		2½ "
Benzoin, 1st quality -		250 "
" 2nd quality -		75 "
Dragon's blood - -		75 "
Cassia - - -		10 "
Black pepper - -		14 "
White ditto - - -		22 "
Gutta percha - -		30 "
Indian rubber - -		25 "
Nutmegs - - -		90 "
Gambir - - -		18 "

Of the coffee, 120,000 piculs were exported; of the rice, 50,000. The quantity of the other articles I did not exactly ascertain.

Of the finest kinds of camphor, not more than two or three piculs a year are obtained; and these bring as much as from 7000 to 10,000 rupees; but I shall have occasion to refer to this subject again.

On the 24th of July I continued my journey, and Mr. Van der Hardt was so good as to arrange the plan of my tour, and give me recommendations to the various authorities, as well as provide me with horses and a guide to *Palembayang*, twenty miles off.

A very little way from Fort de Koch the road leads through a small valley, which is celebrated for the peculiarity of its structure. It is surrounded by walls of sandstone about 200 feet high, as smooth and perpendicular as if they had been cut with the chisel: through a narrow cleft in these walls, you enter the valley, and then you find yourself in the midst of luxuriant rice plantations, watered by a pretty little river; but at the opposite end you must make your exit by a path as steep and narrow as you came by, and by this you again ascend to a lofty table-land. This valley is called *Karbanwengat.*

From here to Palembayang, the ground was so hilly that it resembled a stormy sea; but on the sides of some of the hills, terraces were formed to lead the water from one rice plantation to another. The road ran frequently over the tops of the hills, and afforded beautiful prospects of the countless eminences and terraces set in the bright fresh green of the young rice that was standing about half a foot high.

July 25th. Benyol, thirteen miles. The first six or seven miles of the road lay through a valley so narrow that it might be called a ravine; and scarcely a hut was to be seen, and not a single rice-field.

The murmur of the river Massang, and the cries of the apes, were the only sounds that met my ear. At the end of the ravine a bridge led across the Massang, whose banks consist of high, piled-up masses of rock entangled and overgrown with fresh evergreen climbing plants, and far below the river foams over its narrow rocky bed.

You soon leave the Massang, and come to the more considerable river, *Alahan-Banyang*, which is navigable for proas for a short distance from where it falls into the sea. Very few rivers on the western coast of Sumatra are accessible even to the smallest boats, as they have too short a course, and too rapid a fall from the rocks and mountains in which they rise.

The mountain chains which intersect Sumatra from south to north, are never lost sight of in travelling through it, though they seem sometimes to recede and sometimes to advance. They vary much in form and height, some rise to 7000 feet, and the *Ophir* on the west coast reaches 9500.

Benyol lies in a deep hollow valley, only in part under cultivation, but containing a little fort. The women we met here wore a very curious head-dress made of a large cloth folded together, and laid upon their heads simply like a load.

July 26th. To *Lubus-Koping*, ten miles. The comptroller, at whose house I had alighted, as well as some of the officers, accompanied me a good part of the way; but when we came to the river *Alahan-Bayang* we found it so swollen that crossing it was out of the question, and we were obliged, therefore, to go back all the way to Benyol.

Within the distance of four or five degrees from the equator, north or south, the rainy seasons are not so regular, and it rains much more frequently than in a rather higher latitude. In Borneo I had almost incessant rainy weather; in Java few evenings passed entirely without rain; and I seemed likely to have the same grievance here in Sumatra. There is nothing more unpleasant to a traveller, especially where the roads are bad, and you have to cross rivers without bridges or force your way through forests; and a day seldom passed without my being soaked through.

In the afternoon news came that the river had fallen, and that it was possible to cross it; so I made haste to set forth again, and got over it safely in a small boat, the horses swimming after us.

This day I rode on horseback across the Equator. The roads, both yesterday and to-day, were in a bad state, for the rain had softened the clayey soil, and

made it so slippery that it was both difficult and dangerous to climb the hills, which were often very steep, with these unshod horses. Such horses they were! In no other part of the world have I ever met with such awkward beasts. They stumbled at every stone, tumbled into every hole, looked out on the bridges, seemingly, for the rotten places, on purpose to put their feet upon them, and made a point of being desperately frightened on all occasions —even at a large leaf, if it happened to be in the way. I am not giving these troublesome brutes a bad character without having had abundant means of forming an opinion, for I have ridden in Sumatra as few men have done; and as I had to be continually changing horses, I had a very extensive acquaintance among them.

Lubus-Koping lies in a fine spacious valley, where the mountains open and fall back, so as to afford a fine view of the Ophir, from the summit to the foot.

I noticed here a change of costume. The people wear hats made of palm-leaves, and from two to three feet in diameter, with a little peaked crown, about six inches high, and decorated with flowers or other ornaments.

July 27th. Panty, eighteen miles. Half the way

lay through beautiful wooded valleys, and after that through jungle-grass; and we saw everywhere plenty of traces of elephants, and of the claws of tigers. Sumatra is very rich in tigers, and the men who carry letters through the island never go in the evening without a firebrand to scare them. It is very strange that neither natives nor Europeans ever think of having tiger-hunts, as they do in British India. The only way in which these formidable creatures are taken here is in snares by the natives; and the government gives a reward of ten rupees for every capture.

Panty lies in the midst of the most magnificent woods, and yet the huts of the people are diminutive and wretched, for they are actually too lazy to cut down the wood. Altogether, they live in a state of the utmost poverty, possess nothing but a few earthen pots and mats, go about half naked or clothed in mere rags, and are, as might be expected, extremely dirty; but for this destitution I believe they have their own indolence chiefly to blame. They certainly have often to labour for the government—but they have no taxes to pay. The men loiter about chewing siri and gossiping, or they give themselves up to gambling and cock-fighting, or they get through their time with sleep, or a game

played among us by children called, I think, "pitch-farthing," which consists in tossing small stones or copper coins into little holes. Should none of these exciting amusements be within reach, they can make themselves comfortable by doing absolutely nothing at all. Had our glorious Schiller but known these worthy gentlemen of Sumatra, he might not have thought the epithet of the "empty-headed, gossiping sex" exclusively applicable to us.

The women here certainly work much harder than the men. Among the people at work mending the roads I counted full three women to one man; and in the coffee gardens, also, the fair sex were in a decided majority. They work in the rice-fields, cut the rice, thresh it in the rude manner practised here, and carry it home. I saw many a woman with one load on her head, another under her arm, and a child on her back, while the lord of the creation walked by her side in a state of gentlemanly ease, carrying nothing but his own person. I do not know that the men do no work at all, but assuredly not half what the women do. Besides the labours I have mentioned, the latter plough the fields with buffaloes, and sow the seed—a rather severe kind of labour, for they have to stand up to their ankles in water. The government, indeed, has found it neces-

sary to come to the assistance of the poor creatures, by ordering that women shall not be employed in making, though they may in mending, the roads; or in building bridges or houses;—a really necessary measure of protection, in order to set some limits to their toils.

Rice in Sumatra is not cut blade by blade, as it is in Java, but with a sickle-shaped knife, and as much as the hand can grasp at a time. The ears are trodden out upon the harvest field itself, and for this purpose little sheds of bamboo are erected nine feet high and five broad, with a floor raised about two feet from the ground and provided with small holes for the grains of rice to fall through. On this floor the ears are trampled by the feet, while a roof of leaves protects the labourer from the intense heat of the sun.

The rice harvest in Sumatra is not reckoned at more than from sixty to eighty fold, while in Java it is from one to two hundred.

July 28*th*, thirteen miles. A tolerably extensive campan, with some carved and painted wooden houses, and a small fort. The situation of this place is very unhealthy; and the people suffer much from a bad kind of ague, which frequently turns among the Europeans to dropsy and consumption.

Here begins the province of *Manhelling*, and the district of Ulu, called by the natives Luba, the inhabitants of which, Uluans or Lubuans, are regarded by many as a peculiar race, but by others only as Malays run wild. In this region also are found the first of the Battakers.

July 29th. Muara-Sipongie, ten miles. A most wearisome ride through sultry valleys overgrown with short jungle-grass; no human dwelling to be seen, no sound to be heard, all around as deadly still as in the sandy deserts of Africa.

I was now in the midst of the Battaker country, and of tribes who have now been for ten years subject to the Dutch government, and who have therefore been obliged to renounce their favourite table delicacy of human flesh.

At *Muara-Sipongie* I was very obligingly received by the comptroller, Mr. Schoppers, who even rode forward several miles to meet me. As I got in in good time, and there happened to be just then a large bazaar being held, I went with him to see it, for on such occasions there is a great gathering of the people. Mr. Schoppers said that they also bring to the bazaar for sale a good deal of gold found in the small river of the district. We asked after this gold, and found that the happy possessors

were such ragged miserable-looking creatures, that we should certainly never have guessed their wealth; or regarded them as the proprietors even of copper. They brought out their treasures to exhibit to us, and they were such large packages that I thought they must contain at least some pounds; but I found that the precious metal was done up in such countless wrappages, that when at last the little bag actually containing it did come out, there was a very small quantity; for the largest piece I saw they did not ask four guineas. It seems that in this country every one has a right to look for gold if he pleases, only he must give the half of what he finds to his Rajah.

Near the bazaar I noticed a space enclosed with palings, and sheltered by a roof thatched with leaves. This it seems was a place set apart for cock-fights, one of which edifying entertainments was now going on. A dense crowd of people was standing round it; several fights had already taken place, and betting was proceeding with great animation. To my astonishment, too, these wretched destitute-looking creatures were not betting doits, but Spanish dollars; and I was told that the sums squandered in this way by men that you would really take for beggars, would be sufficient to keep them and their families in com-

fort and plenty. The preparations for the combat, and the manner in which the poor animals are excited to anger, are the same as in Java; but I noticed that here each proprietor of a cock kept making the most horrible grimaces and threatening movements with the hands and feet during the fight, and that one of them was continually blowing, which both spectators and bettors took much amiss, so that there arose a general murmur about it. In about a minute one of the cocks left the field of battle, and the other was declared the victor; but he fell down and died even before the vanquished one. Other cocks were immediately brought to replace these victims, and the sport proceeded. Half the day will these men, amongst whom were more Malays than Battakers, continue this brutal and disgusting kind of gambling, and lose at it, as I have said, sums that would be sufficient for their ample maintenance. Its great prevalence at this place may be accounted for from the number of Malays.

In the afternoon Mr. Schoppers had the kindness to send for the Regents from all the villages round, in order to speak with them concerning my journey into the country of the independent Battakers. He himself considered it as extremely dangerous, and cited in support of his opinion the terrible fate of

the two missionaries; but he admitted that this murder had taken place partly in consequence of a misunderstanding. Some time before the arrival of the missionaries, some Mahommedan priests had made their appearance in the country, accompanied by a band of armed men, and had forced them by fire and sword to accept their religion, — very much as the Spaniards did formerly in Mexico and Peru. When therefore the unfortunate Americans presented themselves as religious teachers, the Battakers imagined they were going to have a repetition of the same scenes, and resolving to be beforehand with their tormentors, they killed them and ate them up.

In the evening we sat in solemn conclave surrounded by regents, and by a great crowd of the people, for it had been noised abroad far and wide that here was a white woman who was about to venture into the dreaded country of the wild Battakers. Regents and people all concurred in advising me to renounce so perilous a project; but I had tolerably well made up my mind on this point, and I only wanted to be satisfied as to one thing, namely, whether it was true, as many travellers asserted, that the Battakers did not put their victims

out of their pain at once, but tied them living to stakes, and, cutting pieces off them, consumed them by degrees with tobacco and salt. The idea of this slow torture did a little frighten me; but my hearers assured me, with one accord, that this was only done to those who were regarded as criminals of a deep dye, and who had been on that account condemned to death. Prisoners of war are tied to a tree and beheaded at once; but the blood is carefully preserved for drinking, and sometimes made into a kind of pudding with boiled rice. The body is then distributed; the ears, the nose, and the soles of the feet are the exclusive property of the rajah, who has besides a claim on other portions. The palms of the hands, the soles of the feet, the flesh of the head, and the heart and liver, are reckoned peculiar delicacies, and the flesh in general is roasted and eaten with salt. The Regents assured me, with a certain air of relish, that it was very good food, and that they had not the least objection to eat it. The women are not allowed to take part in these grand public dinners. A kind of medicinal virtue is ascribed to the trees to which prisoners have been tied when they have been put to death, and the stem is usually cut into sticks five or six feet long, carved into figures or arabesques, and decorated

with human hair; and these sticks are taken in the hand by people who go to visit the sick, or when any medicine is to be given.

The Battakers, like the Dyaks, appear to be destitute of any kind of religion; they do not pray, and they have neither priests nor temples; yet they believe in good and bad spirits,— a few, that is, of the former, and a very numerous assortment of the ill-disposed. When any one falls ill, they maintain that an evil spirit has possession of him, and it is common to attribute every kind of misfortune to this sort of demoniacal influence. Sometimes the evil spirit is said to take up his abode in a man without making him ill, and in that case his sayings are regarded as those of an oracle, and his behests faithfully obeyed, since to offend him would be to offend the evil spirit. The Rajah is often considered to be possessed by a demon, but rather in a complimentary sense; and he generally in such a case performs many extraordinary grimaces and contortions, and adopts a very wild style in his dancing, by which means he secures an amount of consideration among the people that enables him to have his wishes received as laws. Among the persons present on this occasion a boy was pointed out to me with great awe as the "Son of the Evil One," his father being

supposed to be possessed by a spirit of this highly respected character.

There are no ceremonies at weddings or funerals, except when a rajah of importance dies, and then all the neighbouring rajahs are invited to attend his obsequies. They come each attended by several men-at-arms, and bring a buffalo calf with them, which is slaughtered, and the meat divided amongst the assembly; and for days, often weeks together, there is nothing going on but eating and dancing and chewing siri.*

The form of government amongst these people must be classed, I think, among limited monarchies, since, though the Rajah is at the head of it, his commands are not always implicitly obeyed, and all his subjects, and even his slaves, treat him with great freedom, though at the same time not without respect. On important occasions many rajahs meet together to deliberate.

Property is chiefly inherited by the eldest son, who, among other moveables, comes in also for his father's wives, whom he is at liberty to convert into his own. In general, wives must be bought like other chattels, and the price of a rajah's daughter is

* This siri is obtained from the Arenga palm, the juice of which also yields sugar.

often as high as forty piastres of gold and several buffaloes. Wives are often bought very young, to be brought up by their future husbands, who treat them in the interval as children; and should a man be too poor to afford himself a wife, he goes, in the old patriarchal fashion, to serve as a bondman in her family, till he has worked out her price. Few are so extravagant as to allow themselves more than one wife at a time.

The Battakers are in many respects much superior to other savages; they can read and write, for instance, and their laws are mostly good and well adapted to their condition; but for all this they are cannibals.

The Battakers subject to the Dutch government are, according to the information I received from Mr. Schoppers, mostly very exact in the fulfilment of their duties, as well as docile and trustworthy. Those among them who are employed as coolies may have any amount of money or goods confided to their care; and thefts, murders, or other great crimes are extremely rare. For a theft the whole community in which it occurs is considered responsible; it must replace the stolen goods, or deliver up the thief. Murders, it seems, commonly originate from jealousy. Criminals are not imprisoned, but delivered to the custody of their own family,

who are answerable for them. The Battakers are judged according to their own laws, even when they are living under the Dutch rule; but these laws afford unfortunately great advantage to the rich, who can buy themselves free of any punishment, even that of death. Executions take place on the bazaar; and the condemned go to death not only with resignation and courage, but with every appearance of joy. They put on their best clothes, adorn themselves with garlands of flowers, and then proceed in company with their friends and relations, with an air of great jollity, to the spot where they are to die. This indifference or apparent indifference to death is found also among the Malays and many savage nations, and has often been attributed to insensibility and want of imagination.

July 30th. Eleven miles to *Kotto-Napau.* The country was constantly hilly, and the greater part of it covered with jungle-grass. There was no deficiency of campans, but they were mostly wretched little places not more than fifteen feet square. The people were all crouching upon dirty torn mats, and had a feeble fire glimmering in a corner, by which stood at most one earthen pot, constituting, it seemed, the entire stock of household utensils. The inhabitants were clothed, if it could be called so, in dark blue rags;

but the children were quite naked, and the women and girls frequently down to the waist. Two huts, very little larger than pigeon houses, I saw suspended between the branches of a banana tree, and I was told that these also served as dwellings.

I passed many little brooks with muddy, dirty water, in which the people seek and find gold; and precisely here, where this source of wealth springs up, does the poverty appear to be the greatest. Does this metal always prove a curse instead of a blessing?

Four or five miles from Muara-Sipongie I saw, in a coffee plantation at the side of the road, some Battaker tombs. They were of a quadrangular form, three or four feet high, and built of stone or earth. On the top of each was a wood coffin, the corners of which were adorned with human figures, four feet high, cut out of wood, but exhibiting most deplorable caricatures of the "human face divine." Each grave was provided with a roof to shelter it, and surrounded by a wooden paling; but the coffin I found did not really contain the body, as that was buried underground.

July 31*st.* *Fort Elant, or Pangabangan*, eighteen miles. Coffee plantations and groups of trees and shrubs now relieved the mournful uniformity of the

jungle-grass. Fort Elant lies in a large undulating valley, surrounded by beautiful mountains. It is the seat of an Assistant-Resident, to whose watchful superintendence and exertions is to be ascribed the appearance of well-being I noticed in the campans around, which were prettier and cleaner than any I had yet seen. The houses stand in regular rows, each a little apart from the others, and no filth is allowed to be thrown either in, under, or before them; the horned cattle, too, have their own separate residence outside the campan. This country was formerly very unhealthy, but since the people have been induced to live in at least a comparatively cleanly manner, the maladies to which they were subject have much decreased. The bridges and roads also show signs of the care of the Assistant; the latter are very well kept, and at least twenty feet broad, a breadth that seemed to me somewhat superfluous in a country where there is as yet no wheeled carriage in use. The Dutch government, however, has them all made so, in case they should have to be used as military roads for the passage of troops.

This making of roads is a considerable hardship to the natives, as their tools are only very imperfectly adapted to such work. They have iron bars for breaking the rocks, but only painted wooden

shovels the breadth of your hand to dig with, and only small knives to cut the jungle-grass, which is continually overgrowing every road that is not much used; and to carry away the earth they dig out, they have nothing but their hands. No less toilsome to them than the making the roads, is the building the houses of the government officers and the coffee magazines. I often saw seven or eight men dragging at one team or a few planks.

Whenever I made any observations on the nature of the work, or the defective character of the tools, the answer I got was, "Oh! the people are used to it;" but I did not find that in other cases there was any hesitation about trying to make them alter their customs; and to making roads, building houses, and laying out coffee, sugar, and spice plantations they were certainly not accustomed before the arrival of the Europeans. But unfortunately in all countries, as far as I have seen, what the people are or are not accustomed to is only taken into consideration just so far as it may be convenient or otherwise to the government; concerning the welfare of the subjects themselves, they do not often give themselves much trouble: and so it is with the government here. The labour of making roads, bridges, and buildings must be got through, somehow or other,

without costing the government anything; and whether in any case fifty or a hundred men are employed is quite a matter of indifference to the governor. Another cause of oppression to the natives in whose vicinity official persons reside is, that they are expected to perform gratuitously a great number of small services — they must go on errands for the great man, work in his garden, &c.; — and as the number of persons on whom he has claims of this kind is not at all fixed, many of the government officers abuse their privilège, and force many more persons to work for them than they have any claim on.

The present Governor-General, Mr. Diemar Van Twist, is said to be exerting himself very zealously to do away with these abuses and causes of oppression; he has raised the price of the articles delivered by the natives and of daily wages, and is endeavouring to abolish forced labour altogether.

August 1*st. Sarumentingi*, twenty miles. Although the character of the country on the whole remained pretty much the same, I enjoyed some fine prospects and passed through some large and extremely well-kept campans, many rice plantations, and a grove of bamboos of extraordinary size and height, — often as much as seventy or eighty feet. The canes are said to contain a great quantity of water.

At Sarumentingi I found a small simple bamboo house, with no more furniture than was barely sufficient for the requirements of the civil and military officers, to whom it afforded an occasional shelter; and since I did not, like some luxurious European travellers, carry a whole *ménage* with me, but only as much luggage as I could in case of necessity carry myself, I should have been obliged on this day to have been content with an extremely humble meal, and a hard couch, if Mr. Godoon had not been so kind and thoughtful as to send forward everything that I could possibly require, as well as servants to wait on me. I found a most excellent meal, with tea and coffee, ready, and afterwards a soft bed on which to recover from my fatigues.

August 2nd. Padang-Sidimpuang, twenty miles. Continual hilly country, only now and then interrupted by a wide plain. The mountains constantly decreasing in height. *Padang-Sidimpuang* lies within the Ankola territory, and possesses a small fort. Here I met the last Europeans, — some officers, and a Comptroller, Mr. Hammers, at whose house I alighted.

During the last three days I had had to ride horses whose pace was so excessively hard that I was completely exhausted—so completely as to have not

the slightest inclination to eat. At dinner I could hardly hold myself up on my seat, but my pride would not allow me to confess how greatly I was fatigued; and in order to appear as if I was eating, I privately conveyed some bits to the cats which surrounded the table, and proved powerful assistants. Most fortunately for me it is the custom here, as in Java, to take a siesta in the afternoon; and never did I so heartily approve the custom as to-day. I rather fell than lay down, and slept profoundly for two hours; then, however, I rose quite refreshed, and was able to make my appearance at tea, and even play a rubber of whist with the gentlemen in the evening.

I saw here a new example of the want of feeling in the Javanese. On the day of my arrival the captain of the garrison was buried. He left behind him four orphan children, and a person denominated a housekeeper, who was their mother. This woman had lived in comfort with him for several years; and now, when he, the father of her children, was carried to the grave, and she knew little what was likely to become of them or herself, she looked just as easy and pleasant as usual, and laughed and joked as if she were in no way concerned in what was going on.

I remained at Padang-Sidimpuang three days; and

here also, when my intention to visit the Battaker country became known, people came to look at me, and warn me from it, and so much the more as it appeared that, only the year before, some disputes had arisen between the Battakers and the Dutch. The former had made an incursion into the Dutch territory, destroyed a campan, and carried off twenty-seven men with them. The Dutch had sent some troops, indeed, to punish the offenders; but as it often happens on such occasions, they found the village empty, the inhabitants having fled into the most inaccessible woods and ravines. The only revenge the pursuers could take was by burning down their huts. Mr. Hammers informed me that, scarcely two years ago, four men had been seized by the Battakers subject to the Dutch, and killed and *eaten*.

All this did not, however, deter me from my purpose; I was determined to penetrate, if possible, through the great valley of *Silingdon*, as far as the lake *Eier-Pau* (great water), which no European had hitherto seen, and of whose existence there was no other testimony than the stories of the natives. Of its position and extent, and of the people living on its banks, the information hitherto obtained was very slight and imperfect. I could not, therefore, arrange the plan of my journey beforehand, but was forced to

leave all to Providence, and hope for my hitherto unfailing good fortune. Mr. Hammers kindly provided me with letters for some of the rajahs who were occasionally in communication with the Dutch, and also with a guide. I put in order some papers, that were to be sent to my family in case I should never come back, and then took a cordial farewell of perhaps the last Europeans whom in this world I was ever to see.

CHAP. VIII.

CONTINUATION OF THE TRAVELS IN SUMATRA.—JOURNEY ON FOOT.—NIGHT BIVOUAC IN THE PRIMEVAL FOREST. —FIRST MEETING WITH THE CANNIBALS. — HOLY-BONAR. — SACRIFICE OF A BUFFALO CALF. — THE VALLEY OF SILINDONG.—HOSTILE RECEPTION.—FORCED RETURN.—REPEATED WILD SCENES.—RETURN TO THE DUTCH TERRITORY.—PAYA KOMBO.—ASCENT OF THE MERAPI.—RETURN TO PADANG.

On the 6th of August I set out on my rather dangerous journey, and travelled twenty miles to Sipirok. All was forest or jungle-grass, and from the top of a small chain of hills I looked over the wide undulating valley of Lawas, one of the largest in Sumatra. I had now passed through a great part of the island, and found it equal, or perhaps superior even, to Java in the beauty of its natural scenery. What a glorious country it might become! but, as yet, it is to a great extent unpeopled and uncultivated. A few plantations there are, but the vast forests of the interior are inhabited only by wild

beasts, and the bloodthirsty tiger has his lair in the scorched jungle-grass.

Yet a great part of Sumatra must certainly be a splendid country for European emigrants. Near as it lies to the equator, the climate on the great table lands, of which there are many, is extremely moderate, and the exuberant richness of vegetation in the thick forests, and the height of the jungle-grass, affords sufficient evidence of the fertility of the soil. Where nature unassisted is so bountiful, she would certainly perform wonders with the aid of cultivation. But the Dutch government does not encoürage the settlement of Europeans — not even of its own subjects; and it declares, alas! with perfect truth, that the example of the whites tends to corrupt the natives. There is, nevertheless, I believe, another motive secretly influential in the case; namely, the fear that the whites might in time become too powerful for the little mother country to hold in check, and even perhaps unite with the natives to render themselves independent.

Sipirok lies in a small smooth valley. Here is the last coffee plantation under the superintendence of a native Writer. I happened to arrive just as the coffee was being delivered, and this gave me an opportunity of seeing a great number of the people.

Their appearance was not prepossessing; their faces were of the same type as the Malays, but actually uglier, and the females excessively diminutive. In the elegant art too of filing and blackening their teeth they have obtained such proficiency, that they are able to do what might seem impossible — to render themselves more frightful than nature has made them. They were very scantily attired, extremely dirty, and all had their cheeks puffed out with the siri they were chewing, and were spitting right and left among, or at least close to, the coffee beans that lay spread out. By way of amusing their leisure, too, they were occupying themselves with hunting for vermin on the heads and clothes of their children, who, covered as they were with horrid cutaneous eruptions, were playing and pelting each other with the coffee beans.

After the coffee had been examined, put into sacks, and placed in the magazine, and when the people had received their money, the open space or square was transformed into a bazaar. From the apartments of the Writer various kinds of goods were brought out; and traders who had been for hours impatiently waiting for the clearing away of the coffee, began to unpack and exhibit coloured stuffs, glass beads, brass rings, eatables, and so forth.

With eager glances did the fortunate possessors of money survey all these tempting wares, only distracted, poor creatures, by the difficulty of choosing amongst so many seductive articles, when their means of purchasing were so small. In the course of an hour the bazaar was over; that is to say, the people had spent all their money.

At Sipirok my travelling on horseback was to cease, and I should again, as in Borneo, have to renounce for a time all the conveniences of life, and recommence my wanderings on foot.

August 6th. Twelve miles to Donan. The way led through thick woods, and over steep hills and mountains by terribly slippery paths. When I reached Donan, I was shown to a dilapidated hut, which contained two sleeping places; and from this time I was of course at every Battaker village, or *Utta*, as they are called, surrounded by a crowd of curious gazers. Even at Muara Sipongie I had begun to find myself an attractive spectacle, as no European woman had ever before made her appearance in that country; but here I *drew*, as actors say, such very full houses,—that is to say, my hut was so thronged,—that I could not tell for a long time who were to be my fellow lodgers; but at length I had the pleasure of discovering that the other inmates

were a nearly dying man and — a murderer! The latter had killed one of his neighbours in a fit of jealousy, and was to be beheaded for it in two days in the bazaar. He lay on the ground naked, and fastened to a post, his feet being drawn through a block; and he was behaving almost like a madman, laughing, weeping, and screaming alternately, and dashing himself wildly from one side to the other. It was a horrible sight! The sick person was a youth of eighteen years of age, who also lay on the ground without mat or covering, though he appeared to be in the last stage of consumption, and had dreadful fits of coughing. Unfortunately I could do nothing for the poor fellow, having neither medicine nor anything else with me.

I could not help observing on this occasion how much more sympathy appeared to be felt with the murderer than with the sick man. The women prepared his siri for him, brought him rice and dried fish for his meals, fed him, as his hands were bound, like a little child, fanned the flies off him, &c.; and the men even unbound him and carried him to a neighbouring river to take a bath. The poor fellow dying of consumption they took no notice of, but let him cough and groan, and gave him neither food nor drink; they could not have done less for him if

he had been already dead. I could give him only rice and water, for this was all I had myself.

Diseases of the lungs are very prevalent in the highlands of Sumatra, and I heard many of the people coughing fearfully. Although the heat is great in the daytime, the nights are almost cold; it rains much, and the people go as scantily clothed as in regions of unvaried sunshine, and have nothing to cover themselves at night when they sleep, so the fact is not so very surprising.

As I was determined I would not, if I could help it, pass the night in the room with the murderer, I sent to beg the Rajah to find me some other place of shelter, and he had the complaisance to order both the criminal and the sick man to be removed; but the people were not to be hindered from thronging in to gaze at me; and even during the night I was not left for a moment alone. Until midnight the fires were kept burning, and they gossiped incessantly; then most of them lay down, pulled their sarangs closely about them, and were soon snoring one against the other.

The next day also I was obliged to pass in Donan, for the Rajah, who was nominally under the protection of the Dutch government, assured me that without his escort I could not venture into the

country of the wild Battakers, now only a few miles off. He would go with me, he said, and use his personal influence with the Rajah, with whom he was acquainted, to secure my safety. In pursuance of this friendly resolution, he first slaughtered a buffalo-calf in my honour, to secure the patronage and favour of the evil spirits,—who, if they were offended, might oppose insurmountable obstacles to our undertaking,—to induce them to refrain from increasing the perils of our journey.

Early in the morning he paid me a visit, attended by some dozens of women and girls, mostly his relatives. They defiled before me in a profoundly humble attitude, bending down, and shading their faces with their hands—the mode of salutation, I was told, for inferiors towards persons of rank. Then they sat down on the ground at the back of the hut, and took out of some pretty plaited baskets a quantity of siri that was intended for my delectation.

The girls wore from ten to fifteen leaden rings in their ears, and had also the upper part of the cartilage pierced and decorated with a button, or a string of glass beads; but when they marry I was told they have to lay aside all these trinkets. The girls have their bosoms covered, the married women mostly bare, and both women and girls twist their hair up

into a knot, putting a straw cushion under it to increase its apparent mass. What is rather perplexing, too, the gentlemen wear it just as long, and twist it up in the same manner as the ladies; they have no beards, and they wear the sarang, their only garment, fastened round them mostly in the same manner. Fortunately they, for the most part, stick on a straw cap, or twist a handkerchief round their heads, and by this sign one may recognise the superior sex.

Many of the girls were of considerable *embonpoint*, and were only young ladies by courtesy, as they had, in fact, passed their youth, although, as it appeared, without entering the conjugal state; a circumstance to be accounted for from wives being purchasable articles here.

The purpose of the Rajah's visit was to invite me to the solemn slaughtering of the buffalo-calf, and I soon accompanied him and his ladies to his hut. The ceremony began with a wild dance, performed by the Rajah's son, a youth of eighteen; and as every one desired to witness the *pas seul* of the young chief, the hut soon became so full that there was no moving. It was whispered about, probably to flatter the young man, that he was possessed by an evil spirit; and, as if he wished to justify the opinion,

his dancing became even more and more fast and furious, until at last he fairly fell down exhausted. Then another took his place; but this was an inferior performer, who did not enjoy the advantage of demoniacal possession, and he soon retired, for the Rajah's son sprung up again, and recommenced his mad exhibition to the accompaniment, as before, of a kind of uproarious music. A bowl filled with unboiled rice was then presented to him, and he raised it several times above his head, as if he wished to offer the contents to the spirits, or beg their blessing upon it. Then he took a small portion and flung it into the air, and after that he rushed out of the hut, scattering the rice as he went, and at last poured the remainder over the buffalo-calf, which lay on a sort of scaffold, bound, and ready to be slaughtered.

After this the prince returned to the hut and continued his extraordinary *ballet d'action* until he could no longer stand, and fell exhausted into the arms of the much edified spectators. Thereupon the calf was slain, cut into many little bits, and for the most part distributed among the people; and the liver was politely put aside for me, and in the evening presented to me; but, unluckily, it had been roasted till it was as hard as a stone, and quite uneatable, so that I had again to content myself with rice and

salt, although the calf had been killed expressly to do me honour.

August 8th. I left Donan with a suite of more than twenty persons, of whom, however, the greater part did not proceed farther than the frontier, about three miles off. At parting they took my hand, and wished me a safe return, but accompanied their good wishes with a pantomime more expressive than agreeable,— pointing to my throat, and giving me to understand by signs that the wild men would cut my head off, and eat me up. This was not very encouraging, but it never once entered my head to desist from my undertaking. My party consisted of the Rajah and five of his people, my guide, and two coolies — one for the guide and one for me.

The way led now into the untrodden wilderness, through all but impenetrable woods and jungle-grass six feet high. We saw no habitation, nor any trace of man, though many of wild beasts, especially tigers. We came to a river, and found that the only way of crossing it was by climbing a tree and scrambling along the branches that stretched over the water about twenty feet above it, and then on to those of a corresponding tree on the opposite bank, which extended its leafy arms across, so as to form, between the two, a kind of natural bridge.

From time to time we came to openings in the forest which afforded glimpses of wide lonely valleys, watered by the innumerable windings of the river Padang-Toru, and of a small lake glittering in the sunlight on one of the hills. The Padang-Toru, to which we often came quite close, is a fine broad stream, and its surface is as yet unruffled even by the smallest canoe: whichever way we looked all was one vast solitude; it seemed as if we were the only inhabitants of the earth.

At this time of year it rains in Sumatra almost regularly every afternoon, and unluckily the rain always caught us on our road; for here, as in Borneo, it was impossible to get the people to start early. The bad weather was particularly disagreeable to me, as I had no opportunity of changing clothes or linen; in the first place, because the people never left me for a sufficient time, day or night; and secondly, because I very often could not get at my small luggage, even had it been ever so necessary.

My guide, like the one I had at Sarawak, did just what he pleased, and always demanded the services of the first cooly that was to be got for his own benefit, leaving my carpet bag to take its chance of being brought by any helping hand that might turn up, and often enough leaving it behind, with merely

an order to send it on. This day the rain was beyond measure annoying, and we had besides to pass the night in the woods. The men put up, indeed, a little roof of large leaves, and spread some also on the ground; but when we arrived I was already drenched through and through, and, having had to walk through a morass, was up to my knees in mud.

I went down to the small stream near which we had encamped, and washed off the mud, and then came back dripping wet, and shivering with cold (the evenings and mornings were very cold), and crept to the fire; but as we had no dry wood, this rather glimmered than burnt. The people collected wood for the night, and caught some small fish in the river; they also brought some perfectly green bamboo canes, the use of which I could not at all understand, but presently I found they were to serve as cooking utensils. The men put some rice and water upon *bisang* leaves, made them up into long rolls, and pushed them into the canes. The fish they prepared in the same way; then laid the canes across the fire and left them till they began to brown, which was a considerable time, as they were extremely moist. They then split the canes, and took out what they had put in. The larger fish were

done in a different way, being stuck on small pieces of wood, and roasted before the fire.

The meal thus prepared was neither very tempting nor very clean, for the rice had not been washed nor the fish gutted; but I had eaten nothing the whole day, and had also walked eighteen miles, so I was not inclined to be very critical, and was well content with it. Before we lay down for the night, I begged my attendants to make up a good fire, in order to keep the tigers from us; but the wood was too wet to burn well, and the men were soon fast asleep, and not to be waked by any calling of mine. We were involved in the thickest darkness, and I found it impossible to sleep a moment, for I was in constant dread of an attack of wild beasts, or of men little less savage.

As often as I saw the gleam of a diamond beetle I thought it was the glare of a tiger's eye, and every leaf that rattled appeared to me to indicate the approach of a serpent. Altogether it was a terrible night!

August 9th. Sossor-Doluk, seventeen miles. Worn out by this anxious and sleepless night, and still weak from fatigue and want of food, for the last night's meal had been a very slight one, I had to set off without taking anything in the morning, and

commenced what seemed likely to be a most toilsome march through the dense dark forest, for we were obliged to force our way continually through the thick underwood and high jungle-grass. Marshes and rivers had not merely to be crossed, but to be waded through in their length, and the trees and bushes were still dripping from last night's rain. Steep hills arose before us as if to block our way, and they were dangerous to cross, being so excessively slippery, that you could scarcely keep your feet a moment. To these annoyances was added a peculiar one from the tall reeds (*Saccharum Koenigri*), which grow to a height of four or five feet, and are so matted together at the top, that they cannot be separated, and you have to creep through them bent double.

The path in these places consisted of a kind of narrow gutter, so narrow that I could only just set one foot before the other; and even this was interrupted by deep pits and holes full of mud. If I slipped into one of these holes, and tried to catch at a bush or a reed, the case became worse, for the reed was sure to break, and the bush to have large thorns, from which I drew back my hands, torn and bleeding; not only hands and feet indeed, but often my entire person was covered with blood. The greater part of this journey through the wilderness,

I was compelled to walk barefoot, as it is impossible, when you have not only morasses, but also water to walk through, to find any kind of *chaussure* that will answer the purpose, and not be a positive obstacle to your progress; and in consequence of having to travel in this manner, I had my feet continually pierced with thorns, and cut through by the sharp edged jungle-grass. At the end of every day's journey, I was obliged to get one of the natives to pull out the thorns, which they did in a very effectual, but rather painful manner, though their only instruments were their large and rather blunt parangs. Very often my feet were so sore, that I thought I could not possibly go on on the following morning, but when the time came I always did.

As we approached what may be considered as the termination of this wilderness, we were startled by a loud yell from many human voices. We stopped, and remained for a time perfectly still; then we crept cautiously and stealthily like thieves, towards the edge of the wood. Scarcely had we issued from it than we found ourselves on the banks of the river Palé, and saw the yellers, forty or fifty in number, standing in the water, in almost the complete state of nature, occupied in fishing. The Rajah told me to remain behind with the people, and, going out

alone, he advanced towards the chief, and begged permission for me to enter his country. After many questions and explanations on one side and the other, he obtained the required consent, and we walked into the tolerably broad river, and over to the other side, where we landed under a magnificent tree, a noble specimen of the family of *Dilleniaceæ*, sometimes called *Colbertia*. This tree was coming into blossom, and had buds as big as a man's fist, which looked just like fruit; but when I broke open one, I found within a most beautiful flower. The buds, of course, open of themselves when they are sufficiently advanced. With the exception of this species, few of the trees in the forests of Sumatra struck me much on account of their height or girth. I have seen some reaching to 100 or 120 feet, but certainly not to 200, as many travellers maintain. The wild flowers I had to seek for; they did not, as in Brazil, burst forth everywhere, and turn the forest into a gorgeous natural garden.

The worst part of the journey, as far as the mere travelling went, was now fortunately got over; but now began the far more dangerous contest, not with nature, but with man. We went on our way, through a country still hilly, and good open paths led us to the place where we were to pass the night, but we

passed on the way some fearful clefts or chasms in the earth, so deep that it made me shudder to look down them.

When we arrived in Sossor-Doluk, a good deal of difficulty was made about receiving us, or rather me; but at length they permitted us to occupy a ruined and dilapidated hut, that appeared so tottering and all on one side that I expected every moment that it would fall upon us. The roof was like a sieve, and I could count the stars over my head as I lay; but nevertheless it afforded us excellent quarters in comparison with what we had had the night before in the wild dark forest, with nothing to keep off the tigers.

During the evening, the Rajah of the place came to us, accompanied by the Rajah of *Segumpolang* (a place in the vicinity), who happened to be here. Both made vehement objections to my proceeding further up the country; and when at last they reluctantly granted me the permission, it was evident that I had my sex to thank for the privilege. Had I been a man they would have taken me for a spy, and either sent me back or, what is more likely, put me to death.

At this place there is a hot spring, but without any sulphureous smell, in which the people bathe,

and which indeed they regard as a specific for every kind of malady.

August 10*th*. *Segumpolang*, five miles. Hali-Bonar, the Rajah of this utta, or village, who accompanied us on our way, was an old but powerful looking man, six feet high. We crossed the river Patang-Toru by a suspension bridge made of a single bamboo cane, at least seventy feet long, but scarcely six inches in diameter. Thin sticks, hung by the side of it, formed a kind of hand-rail; but as in the similar bridge in Borneo, were not adapted to afford the slightest support, but merely helped you to balance yourself. The simplicity of this kind of bridge building was doubtless admirable, and the bridge was certainly stronger than it looked, as it swung in the air with no other support than having the two ends fastened to trunks of trees. As I approached the middle it shook more and more, and I certainly thanked God when I found myself safe on the other side, especially as this single cane bore at the same time about a dozen other people. The landscape was charming — a beautiful undulating valley, varied with level spaces covered with plantations of rice. Hali-Bonar led me past his own utta, half a mile further on, to an open space where bazaars are held, in order to present me there to several other Rajahs,

and to the people.* This he did with a view of securing me a friendly reception in case I should, in the course of my journey, pass through any of their villages. The Rajahs who were then in the bazaar came and sat round me on the ground, and their spear-bearers, of whom each had half a dozen, formed a circle round us; — a very necessary precaution, it appeared, for the people came rushing towards us from all sides with wild cries. The dealers forsook their wares, and the customers forgot their purchases; all came running to stare at me; and those who could not get near, climbed upon the trees. There was a confusion, — an uproar of which I cannot give any idea. I could not understand a word of what they said, and I was entirely alone among these savages, for the Rajah of Donan, with his people and my guide, had remained behind in the utta.

Amidst the multitude that surrounded me I noticed many tall strong looking men, of at least six feet high, and the women also were more robust in appearance than any I had hitherto seen in Sumatra. Their faces were, as usual, frightful; the lower jaws

* In the Battaker country, every utta has its own separate rajah, and this makes one of the difficulties of travelling there, as you have every few miles to seek the protection of some new one.

enormously large and prominent, their complexions were not very dark, and they wore large brass plates or pieces of wood as ornaments for their ears, and had handkerchiefs folded and laid upon their heads. Both sexes were clothed in the sarang, and the men had large holes in the cartilages of their ears, as well as the women, but seldom more than one in each. The Rajahs wore heavy gold ear-rings, while the other men very often had a kind of straw cigar sticking through them; and another distinction of their superior rank consisted in large brazen tobacco-pipes, which were hung to heavy rings of the same metal. I remarked among the Battakers the same armlets made of white shells, and the same kind of drums, as among the Dyaks. When I had passed about an hour among these people, Hali-Bonar conducted me to his utta. The houses of the Battakers are built on piles like those of the Malays, but are incomparably larger, handsomer, and more substantial. They occupy a space of forty or fifty square feet, are built of wood, and have high roofs, projecting about five feet beyond the walls, terminating in a peak at each end, and thatched with the fibres of the arenga palm; many of them had the front walls painted and carved as tastefully as those of the campan, near Fort de Koch. They have, however,

neither windows nor doors; there is merely a wooden gallery carried round at the top, shaded by the projecting roof, in which there is an opening to the interior of the house, closed by a sort of portcullis. To the gallery you must ascend by a ladder. The inside of the house consists of one large apartment, in which three or four families live, each in a corner. It is of course perfectly dark, and when you first go in you can perceive nothing whatever but some air-holes near the roof, which serve also for the escape of the smoke of which the room is constantly full; since, however little the people have to cook, they keep their fires constantly burning.

In the space below the house, poultry, pigs, dogs, cows (always black), buffaloes, and a horse, have their abode. The pigs are of a peculiar species; they have sharply pointed snouts, very short legs, few bristles, a fall in the back, and a thick short mane, like a horse.

These people have great stores of cattle and rice, and are wealthy compared with the Javanese or the Malays of Sumatra. They have quite a stock of household utensils, earthen and iron pots, plates, bowls, many mats and baskets, as well as wooden troughs, and even spinning wheels. Opposite to almost every house is an open hut, or shed, called a

soppo, where the rice is laid up in sacks and baskets, and where the people are mostly to be found during the day; where the women weave their sarangs, and the men assemble to carry on their chief occupations, namely, gossiping, or doing nothing whatever; for among the Battakers the women do almost all the work. In the evening the girls of marriageable age also meet here the young men, and in the soppo strangers are assigned their quarters for the night. Here, therefore, I had to take up my temporary abode. Hali-Bonar offered his services to accompany me as far as Silindong (the Great Toba), an offer which I accepted with so much the more satisfaction, as the Rajah of Donan and his attendants left me here. I had to wait a day, as I had done at Donan, while Hali-Bonar slaughtered a buffalo calf, partly in my honour, and partly to propitiate any evil spirits who might be inclined to make themselves troublesome to us in the course of the journey; he then came in person to fetch me, and conducted me to a very neat soppo, carpetted with matting, which stood opposite his own house. The ceremony took place in the open air, and a full orchestra of musical instruments, drums, gongs, and a kind of bagpipe, were assembled on the occasion. The calf was slaughtered to the accompaniment of the whole band; the

choicest portion, namely, the entrails, being carried into the Rajah's house, and certain bits politely set aside for the Rajah of Donan and his people.

After this a man came forward in a simple, yet picturesque costume; a handsome sarang reached from his hips to his feet, a white cloth was twisted like a wreath round his head, a black shawl edged with glass beads was wound round the upper part of his body, and fell in rich folds around him. He held in one hand a buffalo horn, filled with water, and in the other a betel-leaf; and after a long speech, much like a prayer, he began a very graceful dance, in which he raised the horn and the leaf several times towards heaven, lifting up his eyes also as he did so, and then poured out some of the water towards me, some towards the musicians, and the remainder over the betel-leaf. The horn was then filled again with water, and the same ceremony repeated, though this time he took a plate of rice, and, after making a speech, did the same with it as he had done with the water. The Rajah now came upon the stage, followed by a man who always kept close behind him, and appeared to be his immediate attendant, and gave us an exact *da capo* of the first dancer's performance, except that the second time he substituted for the horn a plate of rice-

cakes, which he set down before me. In conclusion, the first dancer and the Rajah performed a very pretty movement together, in which they several times raised their hands, as if imploringly, towards heaven, and accompanied their pantomime with earnest and solemn looks; the servant all the while following his master in every step he took, and mimicking his every motion with the exactness of a shadow. Whoever had not known that all this was an invocation of evil spirits, a worship, in fact, of Satan, might certainly have taken it for a decorous and devout service to God. I do not remember to have seen among any people so venerable and imposing a form.

After these two chief performers had retired, others came forward, and entertained the company with some very tedious displays in the Malay style. The women were not present at this festival, but they were not forgotten in the distribution of the meat. The banquet was cooked as well as eaten in the soppo where I had been lodged, the meat and entrails roasted on wooden spits, and a kind of pudding made of rice and buffalo-blood. A portion of every dish was given to me, and a particularly large piece of liver; and what I did not eat, was brought to me again and again till I did. Many of

the guests drank, after the meal, warm, and even hot water, which seemed intended, like our strong coffee, to help digestion.

In the afternoon I begged Hali-Bonar to let the people perform some of their dances. The sword-dance I found, to my surprise, to be exactly the same as that which I had seen among the Dyaks in Borneo. There was another called the knife-dance, the only difference of which consisted in sticking the knives in sheaths in the girdles worn by the dancers, and drawing them out again, instead of laying them on the ground.

This dance was followed by a pugilistic combat that seemed to afford much diversion to the people, and in which the combatants hit at each other in an extremely cautious manner, and accompanied their blows with an extraordinary variety of grotesque attitudes and grimaces; but the most wild and animated exhibition was the one called "the devil's dance." These dances were all performed by men, one excepted, in which a woman took part; but she only made gesticulations with her hands, and from time to time crouched upon the ground, whilst the men danced about her. Both men and women kept their eyes fixed upon the ground.

I had now seen all the dances but one, namely,

that which is performed when a man is to be killed and eaten. This they did not seem to wish to exhibit, but yielded at last to my entreaty, and, by way of prelude, bound to a stake a log of wood which was to represent the victim, and put on the top of it a straw cap. There was certainly no want of animation in this performance; the dancers lifted up their feet as high as they could, and darted their knives at the supposed victim in a most expressive manner. At length one of them gave him the first stroke, and this example was speedily followed by all the rest. They struck the head (the straw cap, namely) from the body, and laid it upon a mat spread out to receive it, taking care to preserve the blood. They then danced round it, uttering wild and joyful cries. Some raised the head in their hands and carried it to their lips, appearing to lick the blood from it; others flung themselves on the ground, and appeared to be lapping up the gore from the dripping head, or they dipped their fingers into it and sucked them; doing all this with the appearance of the greatest delight: the predominant expression, indeed, of their faces was that of pleasure rather than of cruelty. This, however, was only play; it might have been otherwise had they had a real victim before them.

Play as it was, though, I could not witness it without some shuddering, especially when I considered that I was entirely in the power of these wild cannibals. Long after I had returned to the suppo, I could not get rid of the painful impression; and when at last I fell into an uneasy sleep, the same images haunted me still.

August 12*th*. *Si-Pigarajah* twelve miles. The bright morning sun drove away these painful visions of the night, and I entered on my day's journey with renewed strength and courage. We had to cross a deep, swiftly rushing stream, the *Patang-Toru*, and this was no easy matter for me, as I could not swim; but we managed it at last, by two of the natives taking each one of my hands, and so towing me over, while I kept up my head as well as I could. The road, which was not bad, led across some low ranges of hills, and through some beautiful undulating valleys; and the principal mountain chain, of which we seldom lost sight, became lower and lower, and did not now exceed the height of from twelve to fifteen hundred feet. We saw few villages, but those were surrounded by earthen ramparts, or wooden palisades, and we could not enter them without permission. I suffered much from the heat, as we were constantly in the sun, or in the glowing

hot jungle-grass. The thermometer showed 121° Fahrenheit. In Si-Pigarajah I again passed the night in a soppo; and I could still not quite make up my mind whether this or the Rajah's house was the preferable residence. In the former I seemed to be regularly set up as a public show; the people were not content with collecting outside, but in the evening, when the fire was lit, they came in and stayed gossiping till far into the night. Many stretched themselves out where they were, and stayed till morning. No one seemed content to take the story at second-hand from his neighbours, but insisted on hearing, from the mouth of my guide himself, who I was, why I had come, where I came from, &c.; for the appearance of a European woman was so extraordinary, that they had never done wondering at it, and mostly did me the honour of ascribing to me some supernatural character. In the house of the Rajah I should have been somewhat more protected from the curiosity of the public, but I should have been exposed to that of his family circle, which was even more troublesome.

In the presence of the men the women showed much shyness, running away with their children the moment I approached them; but when we were left alone, they became so familiar and importunate, that

I found it impossible to keep my small possessions, or even the very clothes I wore, from their clutches. I did not know how to defend myself from them; for had I begun to give, that would have been the signal for them to begin to take. Sometimes I had to place my knapsack behind me, and push off the women by main force; and then they mostly drew back with threatening gestures, and uttering what were evidently abusive speeches, so that I always avoided, if I could, being alone with them. I was far safer with the men. They would stare at me, indeed, by the hour together, and gossip about me everlastingly, but they behaved otherwise with perfect propriety. One of the most unpleasant things in the houses was the almost total darkness during the day; and, in the evening, when the four fires were burning, the smoke was so thick that I could hardly open my eyes. The dirt, too, was so excessively disgusting, that I could hardly bring myself to swallow the meals they prepared for me. Neither the rice nor the pot it was boiled in were ever washed; the people have no idea there is any occasion for it; and when they boil milk with herbs and leaves, to turn it into curd, they stir it up with their filthy hands, and shake the curd over the rice in the same manner. When they killed a fowl for me

and the guide, they used to tear it into four pieces, and throw them fairly into the fire, where they became burnt to perfect charcoal. They then took the entrails for themselves, and these they did wash a little. They will eat every creature that lives, including worms and beetles, and that not from hunger, for they have abundance of cattle, poultry, and rice, &c., but from an abominable kind of epicurism.

The women are here regarded as mere animals of burden; and, with the exception of tilling the ground and sowing the rice, almost all labour falls on them. They nurse their children, too, and carry them on their backs, an astonishing time. I have seen urchins of three years old taking the mother's breast, and fighting about it with younger claimants; and many a stout boy of about the same age would leave his play when he saw his mother, and jump up on her back, when she would tie him fast with an old handkerchief or sarang, and then go about her work with this additional burden. In the morning the mothers would frequently awaken quite big children out of their sleep, tie them on their backs, and so set about their domestic labours.

August 13*th*. *Silindong* (*Great Toba*), twelve miles. The first half of this journey, like that of yesterday, lay through thinly-peopled valleys, and then we

came to a low mountain ridge, from the top of which the surprisingly beautiful Silindong valley lay spread out in all its extent at our feet. Throughout this journey I had seldom seen an open space of more than a few miles in extent; but here was a plain of at least twenty miles long, and eight broad. It was intersected and watered by many winding branches of the Patang-Toru, and innumerable little groves lay scattered like bouquets over the broad smooth green surface. In each of these groves I was told a village lay concealed.

Before descending into this valley, Hali-Bonar warned me never to move away, but to remain always close behind him. The procession was opened by six of his men, armed with spears; then came he, then I and my guide, and after us some people from some of the villages we had passed. At the first utta we came to in the plain, there seemed to be great opposition made to my proceeding further. It had somehow become known to the inhabitants that I was there, and before each village the men stood assembled, armed with lances and parangs, to prevent my entrance. At last, however, Hali-Bonar prevailed on them to let me pass.

At one place, indeed, things looked more serious. More than eighty armed men stood in the pathway

and barred our passage, and before we were aware of it, their spear-men had formed a circle round me, and shut me in, looking the while indescribably terrible and savage. They were tall robust men, full six feet high; their features showed the most violent agitation, and their huge mouths and projecting teeth had really more resemblance to the jaws of a wild beast than to anything human. They yelled and made a dreadful noise about me, and had I not been in some measure familiar with such scenes, I should have felt sure that my last hour was at hand. I was really uneasy, however: the scene was too frightful; but I never lost my presence of mind. At first I sat down on a stone that lay near, endeavouring to look as composed and confidential as I could; but some Rajahs then came up to me with very threatening looks and gestures, and gave me clearly to understand that if I did not turn back they would kill and eat me. Their words, indeed, I did not comprehend, but their action left no manner of doubt, for they pointed with their knives to my throat, and gnashed their teeth at my arm, moving their jaws then, as if they already had them full of my flesh. Of course, when I thought of coming among the wild Battakers, I had anticipated something of this sort, and I had therefore studied a little speech in

their language for such an occasion. I knew if I could say anything that would amuse them, and perhaps make them laugh, I should have a great advantage over them, for savages are quite like children, and the merest trifle will often make them friends. I got up, therefore, and patting one of the most violent, who stood next me, upon the shoulder in a friendly manner, said, with a smiling face, in a jargon half Malay and half Battaker, —"Why, you don't mean to say you would kill and eat a woman, especially such an old one as I am! I must be very hard and tough!" And I also gave them by signs and words to understand that I was not at all afraid of them, and was ready, if they liked, to send back my guide, and go with them alone, if they would only take me as far as the *Eier-Tau.* Fortunately for me, the doubtless very odd way in which I pronounced their language, and my pantomime, diverted them, and they began to laugh. Perhaps, also, the fearless confidence that I manifested made a good impression; they offered me their hands, the circle of spear-men opened, and, rejoicing not a little at having escaped this danger, I journeyed on, and reached in perfect safety a place called *Tugala,* where the Rajah received me into his house.

August 14*th.* A short march of only six miles, interrupted by wild and terrible scenes. It was only with the utmost difficulty I reached an utta where I was allowed to pass this and the following day in security. Long and vehement debates were, however, obviously taking place concerning me. Every moment some new rajah came into the village, attended by his spear-men, till it was entirely filled with them; and finally, it was, alas! determined in solemn council that I should not be allowed to proceed any farther. This was, indeed, hard! So near to the goal, and after so many toils and dangers, to be obliged to turn back! According to the accounts of the natives I could not be now more than ten miles from Lake Eier-Tau; I had but to cross one low range of hills, and I should find myself on its shores. They told me that the "Great Water," as they call this lake, extended far and wide, and that the countries around it were very fruitful, and inhabited by a powerful people, under the rule of a female sovereign.

I repeated my proposal to leave my guide behind, and go alone with them, if they would allow one of their people to accompany me to the lake; but it was in vain. I tried to move them by entreaties to allow me, at least, to ascend to the summit of the

hills, that I might obtain a glimpse of the Great Water, but my proposal was decidedly negatived. They replied that the Battakers were constantly at variance with the people of the lake country, and that no one of them would venture to go there with me. They assured me that no *Dutch* person—by which they mean any European—had ever come as far as I now was, without being treated in a hostile manner—*Anglicé*, killed and eaten.

I heard afterwards that the queen of *Eier-Tau* had lately entered into a treaty of peace with the inhabitants of Silindong, under the condition of never allowing any strangers to come near her frontier; but whether this intelligence was true or false I had no means of ascertaining.

On the following day the concourse of people was greater than it had ever been before. It seemed as if all the warriors of the valley were crowding in. Whichever way I looked, I saw nothing but spears and parangs—many of the latter drawn,—and there were even some long guns. It was a fine martial scene, that I should have regarded with pleasure had my own situation been rather less critical; but I saw by the looks and gestures of the heroes that this grand display was got up on my account, though not

precisely in the way I might have wished; and I could not feel sure for a single moment that one or the other might not take a fancy to murder me; for as a trifle may make a friend of a savage, so also there needs often but a small matter to turn him into a cruel enemy. The most uncomfortable idea was, that the people I was in the midst of were cannibals; and there were moments in which I could hardly understand how I had found courage enough to venture among them.

During the night a woman died in the house next the Rajah's, and I went to see what they were going to do with the body. It lay stretched out upon mats, and so enveloped in two sarangs as to leave only the face visible. Three women, the daughters, I was told, of the deceased, were moving about her, beating a regular measure with their feet on the ground, uttering some words at the same time, and pinching their bare bosoms till the blood came. Every moment too they stooped down and touched the body. The other female relations sat at the feet, and from time to time uttered a howl; the husband remained apart, and showed a very sorrowful countenance. Before the house stood the coffin—a hollowed-out trunk of a tree—but so narrow a one that the corpse had to be thrust in by

main force. Bodies are usually buried under the trees at the edge of the forest, and I never but once saw a grave in a village near a house.

In striking contrast to the attention these people pay to the dead, is their utter neglect of the sick, and want of feeling for their sufferings. In many of the villages I saw poor half dying creatures, dragging themselves slowly and painfully along, and tottering down the house-ladder, to go and warm themselves in the sun, and no one offering a helping hand, or showing them the slightest attention.

August 15*th*. Towards noon I left the utta with my companions to commence my involuntary return journey, but not by the same road by which I had come. I was dragged about from one utta to another, till it almost seemed as if the Battakers were as unwilling to let me leave their country as they had been to let me enter it.

The uttas in this valley are all fortified with earthen walls eight feet high, and surrounded by bamboo plantations so high and thick that not a glimpse can be obtained from without of either walls or houses. Some villages have a moat also; and there is never more than one entrance, and that a very narrow one, and closed by a door which is locked at night.

Although I had renounced my plan of penetrating still further into the country, and had set out on my return, as I was ordered, my life, it appeared, was not yet safe.

At the entrance of one of the uttas to-day, we were received by a tall, very ferocious fellow, surrounded by armed men, who immediately, as those of yesterday had done, formed a circle round me. The chief savage spoke with great violence, and hardly allowed the people with me to utter a word. I saw the yellow face of my guide turn deadly pale, and the words seemed to die upon his lips. The chief pushed me several times, and signified to me, in the most imperious manner, that I should follow him into his hut; but Hali-Bonar gave me a look, that I understood, not to do so, but to remain close to him. It was not till after a very long and fierce dispute that he obtained permission for me to pass, and it was evident my life was hanging by a hair.

As soon as we had passed through the utta, my faithful protector desired me to walk immediately before him; thinking, probably, that the blood-thirsty chief might come behind me, and stab me in the back with his parang. He also recommended me to walk as fast as I possibly could; and we ac-

tually ran for five hours through jungle grass and forest, until we came to an utta where the people were less hostile, and would have allowed us to pass the night: but Hali-Bonar evidently thought the distance was not yet sufficient, and we continued our toilsome march without interruption, by strange, circuitous, intricate paths. At a very late hour we reached an utta where he thought we might remain, but the name of it has escaped my memory. I could not venture to write down a word for fear of being taken for a spy.

August 16*th.* This morning I saw a girl rush screaming and crying out of one of the houses and fling herself on the ground, as if in a transport of sorrow. At the same time she took off, one after another, her ornaments from neck, arms, and ears, wrapped them all carefully up in a handkerchief, then sprang up, ran to the next house, and flung herself down with the same cries as before; then she got up again, and hurried back into the house whence she had first come.

I thought she must be insane, but my guide informed me that the young lady was only going to be married that evening, and would consequently have to bid farewell to her beads and brass rings. For these beloved trinkets she was weeping those

bitter tears, though it was very unlikely she would shed one on leaving her parents' house.

We made very little progress this day, but went from one utta to another, or sometimes a great way round to avoid going into one, whose inhabitants Hali-Bonar had reason to think were ill-disposed towards us. I could never learn why we could not have gone back by the way by which we had come.

In the uttas where we spent a night we were hospitably received and fed with rice and *ubi* (sweet potatoes), or perhaps a fowl, and in the morning had *tadi*, a sort of curdled milk already described. The fowls, ubi, and tadi, were given by the rajahs, the rice by the community. In those villages, however, where they had no mind to receive us at all, they would hardly give us so much as a drop of water.

August 18*th*. All yesterday and the day before, being dragged from one utta to another, but receiving a more or less friendly reception, and at length we had left behind us the beautiful valley of Silindong, which had given me so much pleasure on the first view, but the passage through which had been accompanied by such terrible scenes. The danger, indeed, was by no means over yet; but at least it was much diminished.

In this my forced march through Silindong I counted more than fifty villages; and just as many, or even more, probably, lie farther up the valley. Many of them consisted of thirty or forty houses, and none had less than five or six. In the larger habitations I counted, in the four corners of the room, from twenty to twenty-five people, children included; but the houses are not all of the same size. At the very lowest calculation, however, we may take, as the average, 150 persons to each utta, and that will give for the entire valley of Silindong a population of 15,000, which is assuredly not too high an estimate. In no one of the islands of this Archipelago, Java excepted, have I ever seen a country so thickly peopled, or so well cultivated. What a pity that so fine a district should be inhabited by ferocious cannibals! They are usually of large and powerful growth, especially the Rajahs, in the choice of whom personal strength and size is probably an important consideration. Their colour is a light brown, or brownish-yellow. The men wear their hair in various ways, sometimes long and flowing, sometimes short, and occasionally sticking up all round like a brush. Both sexes are clothed in black sarangs, sometimes trimmed round with glass beads; but an ornamental affair of this kind

costs from thirty-five to forty rupees. The weapons of the country — the lance and the parang — are scarcely ever laid aside by the men; they will hardly step outside their doors without them. Among the principal occupations of the Battakers may be counted chewing siri and smoking; their mouths, like those of ruminating animals, being scarcely ever at rest: and this is true of the women as well as the men,—nay, even of children of five or six years old; and I really believe they only leave the mother's breast to take to cigars and the no-less-beloved siri. I used to see little brats of five with their straw bags, containing the ingredients of this delicate dainty, hanging over their shoulders.

With such habits as this it is not surprising to find these people dirty beyond description. Their sarangs are never either changed, or washed, or mended; but, once put on, they are worn till they drop off, bit by bit, from their unclean bodies. They bathe, indeed, or rather pour water over their persons, as the Malays do, without either rubbing the dirt off their skins, or drying themselves, so that they are not much the better for the operation. Neither their houses, their mats, nor their cooking utensils are ever cleaned at all: they put their hands into everything they are cooking, and the children

eat over the pots, and let bits fall into them out of their mouths; and sometimes a dog will come up and privately lick them out. All this, however, is nothing to what I have sometimes witnessed. I will mention one instance to show that I do not calumniate the Battakers when I call them filthy, though my readers will wonder how I could write down such a thing.

I was sitting in a soppo, near a woman who was engaged in weaving, and had at the same time a child of ten months old tied on her back. The child began to cry, and the mother put it to the breast, but as it had been shortly before crammed quite full with rice, the mother's milk was too much for it. It became evident, in all sorts of ways, that the child's stomach was greatly overloaded: nature took measures of relief accordingly, and the state of the mother's lap I need not describe. But the lady was not in the least disturbed by these accidents; she sat still, without taking any notice, but presently called a dog, and induced him to afford his assistance, and also to lick the child's person a little, holding it to him in various positions for that purpose. She then tied it upon her back again, and went on with her work as if nothing had happened, and without making any further attempt at cleansing her sarang.

And among these people I passed several weeks, and had to eat with them out of the same dish! Few will doubt that this was the heaviest price I ever paid for my love of travelling. Not all the toils, hardships, and dangers to which I was exposed were ever half so hard to bear. It taxed my powers of endurance to the utmost.

We passed the night about six miles from the valley of Silindong, at a village called *Kassan.*

August 19*th.* *Bolanahito.* Here I took leave of my true friend Hali-Bonar, to whose powerful protection I certainly more than once owed my life; and I had now again to traverse the forest and wilderness that form the natural frontier of the country of the wild Battakers, and the boundary line that separates it from the Dutch possessions. As a last friendly office, Hali-Bonar gave me four of his people to escort me as far as Donan.

August 20—21*st.* Accustomed as I was to the rain and the heat, and all the fatigues and hardships of this most wearisome march, I could not help feeling a kind of horror come over me when we arrived again at the borders of the forest, and I thought of the rugged paths, the tigers, the nights of sleepless terror that I had had to suffer from on my first passage through it. This time, however,

it proved scarcely as bad as I had expected, and on the evening of the second day we arrived safely at Donan, where I met with the most cordial reception. The people thronged round me, pressed my hands, and repeated with one accord that they never expected to see me come back.

During this journey I had often made inquiries concerning the camphor tree, which I had been told grew in the north of Sumatra to a height of 120 feet, though the specimens I had seen never exceeded seventy. The camphor is found in a concrete state under the bark, and is swept down with long brooms; but this must be done with the greatest care, for if the broom goes too deep, the tree is destroyed. Sometimes the people are improvident enough to cut the tree down in order to get more for the moment; but even by this method they can only get two pounds of camphor from a tree, and by the former never more than one. A picul of camphor is worth from 5,000 to 10,000 rupees, but all Sumatra does not yield more than two piculs a year. It is not used here as medicine, but is eagerly bought by the Chinese, and again from them by the people of Japan, who mix it with their own camphor, and use it in the preparation of their incomparable varnish. As medicine, the camphor of

Sumatra is not superior to that of China or Japan itself.

Sago-palms I saw very frequently in the woods of Sumatra, but they are said to be less productive than those in the Moluccas, where their true home is.

I left my guide behind me at Donan without any regret, as he had become, if possible, more intolerable than the one I had in Sarawak. I wanted only a cooley to carry my small luggage, but they offered me a boy of ten years old, whom I declined, and refused to stir from the place till my guide had furnished me with a stronger assistant. Scarcely, however, had we proceeded a mile into the wood before the boy came running after us, and the grown bearer, setting down his package, disappeared with all speed, and I perceived that the arrangement had been preconcerted—indeed, the boy told me so. I mention this trifling circumstance to show how completely one is at the mercy of these people. When I got back I did not fail to complain to Mr. Hammers of the bad service this guide had rendered me; indeed, I have good reason to think that he was chiefly to blame for my not being permitted to go on to the Eier-Tau, and that he had purposely thrown obstacles in the way, that he might be able

to get home the sooner. My complaints, however, did not answer much purpose, for as long as I staid the culprit took care to keep out of the way; and when, long after I was gone, he made his appearance again, he declared he had been lying sick at Donan, of a malady brought on by the fatigues he had undergone in my service.

I walked this day to Sipirok, and there my pedestrian journey came to an end, after I had walked in the whole about 150 miles, which on good roads would have been no such great matter, but in such a country as I had gone through, it was really a kind of Herculean labour.

August 23*rd. Padang Sidimpuang.* At four o'clock in the afternoon I arrived here in safety, but almost starved, at the residence of Mr. Hammers. Since three o'clock the day before I had not tasted the smallest nourishment, and my first request was for a cup of coffee, which was given me, with some buffalo milk, and a large slice of bread. I cannot convey an idea of the delight I felt when I found myself once more in perfect safety, and seated at a cleanly table before good wholesome food, and afterwards went to rest in an excellent bed. No one who has not undergone much fatigue, hardship, and pri-

vation can possibly estimate such blessings as they deserve.

I stayed a few days at Mr. Hammers', and also rested a day or two at various places on my way to Fort de Kock; but when I reached it, on the 9th of September, I was far from well, and immediately afterwards was seized with a violent fever. Thanks, however, to the excellent care taken of me by the amiable wife of the Resident, to the medical assistance obtained for me, and my own almost indestructible constitution, I very soon recovered; but the fevers of Sumatra, nevertheless, are very malignant and obstinate, as indeed I had myself unfortunately cause to remember. They are of an intermittent kind, but will sometimes hang about you for years, and when they do not prove otherwise fatal, frequently terminate in consumption.

As soon as ever I was sufficiently restored, my thoughts began to turn towards another excursion. Dr. Bauer, a German, distinguished for his medical and botanical attainments, happened to be stationed at Paya-Kombo, and I wished to become acquainted with him, and at the same time with a district of Sumatra which I understood to vary much in its character from those which I had seen.

On the 18th of August I was once more on horse-

back, and rode twenty-two miles to Paya-Kombo. The waving hilly country was now giving place to wide plains and beautiful valleys, and in the distance rose a glorious mountain chain, from which stood out conspicuously the giant peaks of the *Merapi*, the *Singallang*, and the *Sago* — not so high, but very striking in its outline. The range is tolerably extensive, and varied by many rocky points and crags that form a beautiful contrast to the luxuriant woods that clothe the neighbouring mountains.

Truly picturesque is the country about the Campan Titti. Isolated cliffs, and even whole masses of rocks, seem to have been flung about the plain, by what a mighty force may be imagined when we consider the distance of the mountain from which in some great revolution they must have been detached. Not far from the campan the *Pallang-Agam* rushes wildly, roaring and foaming down a narrow chasm in the rocks. A high stone bridge leads across it, and on the other side rises like a throne a stately group of rocks, all wreathed and draped with climbing plants.

I lingered long on the bridge, gazing at the wild beauty of the torrent, the tranquil landscape around me, and the mountain world that lay beyond.

The last few miles before reaching Paya-Kombo

I passed through complete avenues of cocoa-palms, and saw numerous campans lying scattered around among the rice plantations. The whole district from Fort de Kock is richly cultivated, and full of animation; every object on which my eye fell was pleasant to look on, and the whole landscape was as if bathed in rosy light.

At Paya-Kombo I alighted at the house of Dr. Bauer, who fortunately had heard of me as I had of him, so that we were no strangers to each other, and the days that I passed in the company of this most highly cultivated man will never be effaced from my memory.

At Dr. Bauer's I also met another countryman of mine, Lieutenant Baron Von Bulow, who had come on a visit from Fort de Kapelle. We talked a great deal of the natural beauties of Sumatra, and among other things, the conversation turned upon the Merapi mountain, its crater, and the splendid views from it. Baron Von Bulow had lately visited it, and gave us such a charming description of it that we immediately resolved to go together and make the ascent; and he rode back to Fort de Kapelle the same day, to beg the Assistant-Resident, Mr. Netscher, to let a rustic cottage that he has on the mountain be got ready for our reception.

I stayed one more day at Dr. Bauer's, and then we set off, and rode twenty miles to Fort de Kapelle, in the district of *Tanar-Data*. Mr. Netscher received us in the kindest way, and had the complaisance, not only to order the cottage, situated half way up the mountain, to be prepared for us, but also to induce the Rajah of *Sangi-djamba* to have the paths leading up to it put into better order.

In the evening we took a walk into the campan *Pugger-ruijong*, where I saw several large stones, with inscriptions that no one has yet been able to decipher. They reminded me by their form of the Runic stones that I had seen in Norway and Iceland.

August 21. From Fort de Kapelle we rode seven miles further, to the coffee plantations on the declivities of the Merapi, and on the way lingered for some time in the campan Sangi-djamba, which, like that of Kotto-Godong, is celebrated for its opulence. Here, as there, the houses are painted in gay oil colours, and decorated with wood carving; and among the inhabitants I noticed sarangs of rich heavy silk, head-kerchiefs embroidered with gold and many real jewels.

We partook of a slight refreshment at the house of the Rajah, and then went on to the coffee plantations, which, as well as the roads, seemed particularly well

kept. From here the ascent had to be made on foot, and a beautiful path, improved in some measure for the occasion, led to the cottage which had been fitted up for us, where every thing was made as convenient and complete as if we had been going to occupy it for months, instead of for a few days. More than seventy men had been at work, yesterday and to-day, at the cottage and the path, and they were still hard at it when we arrived. A small sleeping room was however ready for each of us, and Baron Von Bulow had sent forward servants, a cook, and provisions, &c., so that refreshments were prepared for us as soon as we got there.

We did not intend to travel any further that day, but we did not therefore allow ourselves any rest, but set out on a ramble, in search of flowers and insects, and favourable points from which to view the landscape around. The triple mountain chain which intersects Sumatra from north to south, lay before us, in all the wildly picturesque variety of its jagged peaks and crags and hollows, in the midst of which glittered, like a silver mirror, the smooth surface of the lake Sinkarra*; wide fertile valleys lay

* This lake is fifteen miles long, and five broad, and lies 1300 feet above the level of the sea.

unfolded to our view, and far away the blue ocean met the cloudless sky.

For a long time we could not tear ourselves from the contemplation of this panorama, but remained absorbed in delighted admiration of the beautiful world of God.

It seemed almost like presumption to speak; the words in which we tried to express our thoughts died upon our lips. No sound met our ear, no breath of air stirred, and we lingered till the last beams of the sun faded—too soon for us—from one object after another, and gave way to the rapidly advancing twilight.

As soon as the night had closed in a signal fire was kindled on the mountain, to announce to Mr. Netscher our safe arrival there, and after a short interval, an answering flame blazed up in the distance.

August 22nd. To-day we only climbed 3000 or 4000 feet,—an easy task, had the path been continued, but in two days' work this was not possible, and so we had to scramble over stones and up the towering mountain walls as well as we could. The first crater we came to must have belonged to a volcano long extinct, as its depths were hidden beneath a tranquil pool. Dr. Bauer discovered some flowers at the edge of the water, and wished

to go down to fetch them, but the sides were excessively steep, and covered with loose rolling stones, and the guide declared that without ropes and a ladder, a descent into the crater was out of the question.

Another crater lay at some distance, of considerable extent, but not very deep; and though its fires also had been long quenched, there was evidence enough in the masses of stones thrown up from it, and the distance to which they had been flung, of what the power of the volcano had formerly been. No flower, nor even a blade of grass, had yet ventured to take root in this burnt-out laboratory of nature.

At length, at a height of 8500 feet, we reached the great crater. I had seen many, especially in Iceland, but such a regular, perfect funnel as nature has here produced I never saw anywhere else. The present depth of this crater is about 400 feet,—the diameter at the top, 300. Thick black columns of smoke were rising from two openings when we reached it, and an incessant hiss and roar gave warning of the activity of the fires beneath. Descending into this crater was not to be thought of, and we were obliged to content ourselves with contemplating the grand scene from the brink.

We did not return to our tabernacle till a late hour, and determined therefore to pass another night in it, announcing our presence on the mountain to our friends in Fort de Kapelle, as yesterday, by kindling a great fire.*

On the 23rd of August we betook ourselves in good time in the morning to Fort de Kapelle, and the following day I rode straight to Fort de

* Dr. Bauer was so good as to allow me to extract from his journal the following account of the vegetation of the Merapi:

"As you begin to ascend you find the cocoa-palm replaced by the *Areng* species, from which the *Suri* (brown sugar) is obtained. Fig trees, which are very numerous at a lower level, begin to decrease in number, and the commencement of the actual mountain vegetation is marked by the full-leaved *Terastromiaceæ* (*Sauraga*); further up, the white nettle, *Urticu nivea* Bl.; still further, splendid red and yellow balsams. The parasitical orchidaceæ are rarer than in Java. At the height of from 2500 to 4000 feet, many oaks and chestnuts appear, the fruit of which more or less resembles those of Europe. Laurels and *Rubiaceæ* are as numerous as in Java; but the beautiful Rosamala (*Liquidambar Altingiana*), which is native to that island is here not to be found. The *Aroideæ*, *Acanthaceæ*, *Araliaceæ*, *Sapindaceæ*, *Scitamineo*, *Meliaceæ*, *Terebinthaceæ*, and *Leguminosæ*, are very abundantly represented. At a height of about 6800 feet begins an Alpine Flora, strongly resembling that of Java. Especially striking is the elegant *Rhododendron retusam*, as well as many fine species of Gentiana *Thibaudia* or *Agapetis*, &c. *Graphalium*, and various new kinds of *Synanthereæ*, are found up to a great height."

Kock, without going near Paya-Kombo. On my way I witnessed a singular natural phenomenon, said to be peculiar to Sumatra. An impenetrably thick white vapour lay over a large tract of country, and covered it so completely that not the smallest trace of any object was visible through it. So calm and still and silver-white lay the mist, so sharply was its outline defined, that you might have sworn you had the sea before you. I knew that it was only a sea of vapour, and yet, until I rode into it, I could hardly persuade myself that it really was so. It remained quite motionless for many hours.

On the 30th of August I left Fort de Kock, in order to return to Padong, but altered my plan on the way and made an excursion to *Priamam* and *Tiku*, on the lake, in hopes of increasing my still very insignificant collection of fish. Five miles from Priamam I came to a covered bridge, 360 feet long, the longest in Sumatra, leading across the river *Mangin*.

At Priamam I alighted at the house of the Assistant-Resident, Mr. Godin, but rode the following day twenty-four miles further, to Tiku, in the hope of making a rich harvest. But unluckily, the incessant rain frustrated my hopes, and indeed spoiled my whole excursion, which, had the weather been fine,

would certainly have afforded me great pleasure, for the country I traversed was very pretty, the roads good, and shaded by avenues of cocoa-nut trees, and the landscape was animated by many neat campans. The valley of Silindong excepted, I saw no part of Sumatra that was as thickly peopled as the shores of this lake.

The hideous custom of making great holes in the women's ears is carried here to great excess. I was always glad when the unsightly aperture was covered by a brass plate, or even a piece of wood, but unfortunately the ladies have to renounce these ornaments on their marriage.

Two days I waited in vain for better weather, and then set off on another rainy day to ride to Priamam; but I remained only two days, for it was now time for me to think of my return to Padang, if I did not mean to miss the steamer which goes once a month to Batavia. During my stay, however, Mr. Godin sacrificed his own comfort to my wishes, so far as to accompany me, during a violent and continued rain, to a small island lying opposite Priamam. For several hours we were busily engaged among the rocks and coral reefs of the lake, seeking for fish, crustaceæ, &c., and we came home dripping wet, and shivering with cold, but richly

laden. I felt rather unwell in the evening, but this did not hinder me from repeating the next day my visit to the island which had so greatly enriched my collection.*

On the 7th of October, I arrived at Padang, but I had been attacked on the road by a violent fever, and accepted with gratitude the invitation of Mr. Van Genepp, to stop at his house, where the kind and careful attendance which I received from this amiable family, and good medical advice, stayed the further progress of the disease; and when, eight days afterwards, the steamer sailed for Batavia, I was sufficiently recovered to go on board.

I had travelled in Sumatra 700 miles on horseback, and 150 on foot, and in the course of these peregrinations I had invariably met with the most courteous and hospitable reception from the Dutch Government authorities and officers. Whether I came with or without letters of introduction, they

* In my former stay in Batavia, I had had the pleasure of making the acquaintance of Dr. Blecher, certainly one of the first Ichthyologists of the day. His collection is extremely rich, though his observations have been principally confined to India. I was so fortunate as to be able to bring him some new specimens from Borneo, Sumatra, and the Moluccas; and he presented me with some very valuable contributions of fish from Java and other places.

gave me every assistance, furnished me with horses and guides, and everything else of which I stood in need; and the magnificent scenery I beheld, the adventures I went through, and the very obliging reception I met with from the Europeans, will always render recollection of this journey in the highest degree pleasurable.

CHAP. IX.

JAVA.—SAMARANG.—THE MUD SPRINGS OF GROBOGAN.—VISIT TO THE FREE PRINCIPALITIES OF DJOGOKARTA AND SURAKARTA.—THE TEMPLE OF BORO-BUDOO.—THE SACRED TURTLES.—AN AUDIENCE OF THE SULTAN OF SOLO.—PRINCELY FUNERAL.—AN AUDIENCE OF THE SUSUHUNAN.—RETURN TO SAMARANG.—JOURNEY TO SURABAYA.

On my return to Batavia, not wishing to trespass too far on the kindness of Mr. Van Rees, the Resident, I took up my abode with the family of Colonel Steuerwald; but I had no intention of making a long stay, for, encouraged by the good reception I had met with in Java and Sumatra, and the readiness everywhere shown to afford me help, I desired now to travel into the interior of Java, as well as to visit the Moluccas, Celebes, &c.

There are in Batavia two steam-boat companies, whose vessels visit all the islands and important points of the Dutch possessions, and to the directors of these,—Messrs. Courtes de Vries and Freese, I went, in order to try and make some agreement

on moderate terms for my passage; but to my very agreeable surprise, these gentlemen immediately offered me the use of all their steamers, to go whither I would without any charge.

On the 26th of November I left Batavia by the "Queen of the Netherlands," (Captain Chevallier), bound for Samarang, on the west coast of Java, a distance of 210 miles. We had splendid weather, and made the passage in thirty-seven hours. We seldom lost sight of land, but saw it stretching like an immeasurable plain along the edge of the sea; but it was not till we came near Samarang, that mountains became once more visible, and among them the *Ungarang*, 5000 feet high.

At Samarang I met with a most cordial reception from Dr. Schmitz. He and his wife were both Germans, and, although personally unknown, had written to me at Batavia to invite me to their house, in case I should find my way to Samarang. His wife I had heard mentioned in Batavia, as a most distinguished singer.

Samarang lies in a very fertile plain, and is surrounded by magnificent avenues of tamarind trees, which attain an unusual height and luxuriance. The Europeans here, as in Batavia, live mostly outside the town. The most remarkable building is the

house of the Resident,—the palace of the Governor, when there was one, on the east coast of Java; it is surrounded by beautiful gardens. The house formerly occupied by the Resident, and now used for a hospital, is the next worthy of notice. I visited the hospital, as I always did in all the Dutch settlements, and found them even in the smallest places admirably arranged. I might repeat of all these fine institutions what I said of the first; and I believe that in this respect the Dutch are in advance of every other nation in the world.

In the Samarang hospital, the insane were especially well cared for; they were in spacious lofty apartments, not more than five or six together, and when I came into that department I had really no notion that I was in the company of madmen. Formerly these unfortunate creatures were tied down during their paroxysms, but under the management of Dr. Schmitz, this mode of treatment has been abandoned. He punishes them merely like naughty children, by limiting their table indulgences for a day or two, and always finds this method effectual.

The most remarkable things to be seen in the neighbourhood of Samarang, are the boiling mud-springs, in the district of Grobogan. Their distance from here is sixty miles, but the Resident, Mr.

Potter, gave me post horses, and Madame Schmitz afforded me the pleasure of her company.

It would have been very easy to reach Grobogan the same day, but as there was, at the distance of thirty-six miles, a considerable tobacco factory, with the proprietor of which my companion was well acquainted, we went the first day only so far. The whole establishment was shown to us. Tobacco in Java is not a complete monopoly; people are not obliged, that is, to deliver it to the Government at a certain fixed price; but the land is hired from the Government for twenty years, and with the land the right to a certain number of labourers at fixed wages. Mr. Klein, the proprietor of these works, has on his lands eight great drying-houses, 750 feet long, 106 broad, and 42 high. The tobacco leaves are not plucked, but the plant is cut off at the stalk, and so hung up. When the leaves are quite dry, they are taken down, thrown into great heaps, and left till they begin to ferment from their own heat. The preparation of the cigars is extremely simple. The fine large leaves are smeared with a little rice paste, the smaller leaves rolled inside, the cigar cut to a certain measure at top and bottom, dried once more, and packed up.

On the 23rd of November we went on to the dis-

tricts of Damok and Grobogan, as far as the mud-springs. Both yesterday and to-day the way lay through a boundless plain, whose monotony became very tedious; but far in the interior we could distinguish the mountains *Unarang* and the *Merbabu*, and along the sea-coast the low promontories of *Sumbing* and *Suidoro*.

This district is renowned for its fertility, so much so as to be called the granary of Java, and yet in the year 1849 it was visited by a dreadful famine. The rice harvest had failed, and thousands of people died of starvation in consequence. Eye-witnesses have told me that the dreadful scenes that took place can hardly be imagined. In almost every hut lay the dying and the dead, and bodies, already putrified, all together; for the living had not strength enough to perform for their friends the last service of burial. Everywhere you met starving children who had lost their parents, wandering about and crying for bread. Men and women fell down in the street and expired. The cocoa-palms were robbed of their crown leaves, that they might be boiled and eaten, and yet so great was the patience and faith of these poor people, that they would stand by the full sacks of rice that lay piled up near the merchants' doors without touching them, and sometimes even sink exhausted from hun-

ger, with the exclamation "God has commanded that we should suffer this fate." No single shop was plundered.

Several private persons sent accounts to the Government, and even to the Governor-General (not Mr. Deimar Van Twist, who was not appointed till 1851); but the Government would receive intelligence only from its own officers, and required an official report from the then Resident of Samarang, a Mr. Beuskens. Will it be believed that this man had the cruelty to declare that the reports were untrue, and to demand the names of those who had furnished them, in order to have them punished? *

When at last the Government discovered where the falsehood lay, it was, for thousands of its unfortunate subjects, too late. † Many were now so weak that they could no longer take food when it was offered them. The villages and the houses were full of corpses, and malignant pestilence broke out in consequence. In thirteen months, from September, 1849, to October,

* Could not a confidential agent have been immediately sent to ascertain the truth? But there were only human lives to save! Had anything so important as the arrears of taxes been in question it would probably have been done.

† Of course, I write this only from the statements furnished to me, but they were on the most indubitable authority.

1850, 120,000 people perished; about 20,000 emigrated.

And what punishments were awarded by the Government to the servants who had so shamefully neglected their duty, and abused their trust? These! The Resident was pensioned with a handsome yearly salary; the Assistant-Resident received an appointment as *Resident* to another province.

In the district of Grobogan, where the distress was greatest, melancholy traces of it are to be seen to this day. Although inexhaustible nature has covered with her green mantle the fields of unburied corpses, she has not been able to restore the crowns of the palm trees, or keep the abandoned huts from falling to decay. Jungle grass and bushes are growing all over the once cultivated grounds, and serve as a rendezvous for droves of wild pigs. In a few years, indeed, all will be smiling as before: the fugitives are returning to their abodes; the soil, after its long rest, will bring forth in twofold abundance; and the traveller will cross the fruitful plain with little idea of the scenes it once presented. I wonder whether they will have escaped the memory of Mr. Beuskens?

The boiling up of the mud-springs can be seen some miles off, and the appearance of it greatly resembles

the surf on the sea-shore,—the mud rising like a wave, and the white steam representing the foam on its crest. We drove to within half a mile of the springs, and there found that the Assistant-Resident had provided sedan-chairs for us, in which we were carried to the spot; and boards were laid across, so that we could advance to the brink. The basin is about 100 feet in diameter, and the whole is filled with mud, but only a small part in the centre is boiling and rising in waves; the remainder is half hardened. This part is about fifteen feet in diameter, and the wave rises four feet, and after long-continued rains, even some feet higher. A fainter boiling up of the mud may be seen in various parts of the basin, and bubbles of air or gas are rising all over it. A second much smaller mud basin, only six or seven feet in diameter, lies not far from the large one. You can get quite close to this; and the mud, which does not rise more than a foot, is merely lukewarm. We put in a very long bamboo cane, but it was immediately raised by the subterranean force, and flung over the brink. The large spring is much hotter than the small one, and the mud has a very salt taste; so much so, indeed, that the people in the neighbourhood sometimes carry it home and manage to extract the salt from it. These springs are certainly well

worthy of a visit; but they did not strike me as much as they might have done many others, since I had already seen much more wonderful things of the same kind in Iceland.

In the neighbourhood of the mud-springs, are springs, or rather, wells of salt, to which you descend by a square opening, four feet wide and forty deep. In the dry season they have a temperature of 133° Fahr., and in the wet, 120°. The openings are lined with boards to prevent the sides from falling in; the water is drawn out into great basins, where it remains till a small quantity of mud which it brings with it is precipitated; it is then allowed to run into very shallow gutters, raised about three feet from the ground, from which the watery particles evaporate in the sun, and the salt is left behind in small white crystals, which are scraped up with shells.

There are many salt-springs in the neighbourhood, from which, in the course of a year, 10,000 piculs are obtained, but I could not learn how much per cent. the water yields.

We returned with the Assistant-Resident to Grobogan, and gladly accepted his friendly invitation to pass the night at his house.

On the 24th November we set about our prepara-

tions for a more considerable journey into the interior of the country. Mr. Resident Potter allowed me post horses for the whole district over which his authority extended, and assured me that the other Residents would do the same. He advised me particularly to visit the magnificent heathen temple and the free principalities of *Djogokarta* and *Surakarta*, and Dr. Schmitz and his wife undertook to accompany me.

We left Samarang on the 26th of November, and travelled only forty-eight miles to Magelang, in the residency of *Kadu*, but for this forty-eight miles we required nine hours; for we had to cross mountains of 2000 feet high,—indeed, one of 4550; and though we had six horses to our carriage, we were continually obliged to take buffaloes also. This slow progress was nevertheless very agreeable, for the prospects were exceedingly rich and varied. A wide extent of mountains, hills, and valleys lay around us, and the sea, with its boundless mirror, beyond. To the west, the prospect was bounded by the *Sumbing*, 10,770 feet high; to the east by the Merapi, above 8000. Northward lay the *Mirbabu*, the *Telo-mayor*, and *Tambu*; southward, the *Minore* range. Among the valleys the most beautiful was the *Ambarawa*, with its exquisite green carpet

sprinkled over with groves of trees; but alas! this beauty is in part deceitful, for the greater part of the valley is covered by a treacherous swamp, said to be in some places of unfathomable depth. Some miles before we had passed a small fort called Unarang, which is considered so healthy on account of its high position, that many sick soldiers are sent there for recovery, and a hotel has been erected for the convenience of private persons. In the valley of Ambarawa lies "Fort William the First," the largest in Java, and built in a regular quadrangle.

At three o'clock in the afternoon we came to Magelang, a place situated at a height of 1200 feet above the sea. The Resident, Mr. Gaillard, was so good as to receive me, and Dr. Schmitz and his wife stayed with some friends. The residence is one of the handsomest buildings in the country, and in one of the most charming situations, commanding a grand panorama of superb mountain scenery. The gardens belonging to it might rather be called a park, and are most tastefully laid out and adorned with many antiquities from the heathen temples, amongst which the sacred ox is, of course, not wanting.

Quite close to Magelang lies a solitary hill, which, the inhabitants say, marks the exact middle of the

island, and which, on that account, they denominate the Navel of Java.

In Magelang I had the pleasure of becoming acquainted with my dear countryman, Mr. Wilsen, whose works I had seen and admired in Batavia. He had been commissioned by the Dutch Government to make exact drawings of the Hindoo monuments, and especially the interior and exterior of the temple of Boro-Budoo; and this colossal task he had now just finished, and intended returning to Batavia in a few days.

The morning after our arrival, however, he was so kind as to accompany us to the above-mentioned temple, and serve as our guide and cicerone.

There is nothing very remarkable in the architecture of the temple. It consists of four stone walls, raised on a small hill, which they entirely cover; they form a quadrangle of 362 feet in diameter, and rise in five galleries, or terraces, one above another; and from these again by three more, to the top, where the building is crowned by something like a great bell, beneath which is seated an image of Buddha, purposely left unfinished, because the Holy One cannot be completed by human hands. The first five terraces reach to a height of about ninety feet; but the entire temple, measured from the summit, to

120 feet. On the highest terrace stand twenty-four bells of stone fillagree work; on the second, twenty-eight; on the third, thirty-two; and each has a sitting image of Buddha. In the entire temple are 505 great statues of Buddha, and 4000 bas-reliefs cut on the internal and external surfaces of the galleries. Not a single vacant spot is to be seen on the walls, which are entirely covered with human figures or arabesques.

For the drawing this enormous number of statues, reliefs, arabesques, &c., Mr. Wilsen only took four years. The entire temple, with all its details, he has drawn with a pen upon four hundred sheets of vellum, and these will be preserved for posterity when the temple itself shall have fallen entirely to ruins. On the bas-reliefs may be found the entire Hindoo history of the creation: the formation of the first man, the progressive sanctification of Buddha, &c. In many points, the history strikingly resembles our own.

The sculptures here, both figures and bas-reliefs, appear to me much more accurate and tasteful in their execution than those I saw at the temples of Elora, Adjunta, and others in British India; but the arabesques, bells, &c., are finer there, as well as more colossal in size. The architecture of the build-

ing itself, can certainly not be compared with that of the grander specimens in Hindostan. In the mode of building without mortar, and the formation of a kind of arch by the projection of one stone beyond another, they appear to be the same.

The temple of Boro-Budoo, and the other Hindoo temples in Java, are not supposed to be of earlier date than the eighth century of the Christian era. How must artists have abounded at that time, to have completed so many gigantic works! Although the Hindoo worship was expelled from Java by the Mahometan in the fifteenth century, and the Javanese have all since then professedly followed the faith of Islam, thousands of them still come at certain times of the year, to offer up their prayers in the Hindoo temples. The Buddhas in that of Boro-Budoo are especially in favour with the female sex, and brides come to them to prefer their private requests, and mothers to secure favour for their offspring; so that something of the ancient faith seems to have passed over into the newer one, and to have become amalgamated with it.

The temple of Boro-Budoo is unfortunately falling fast to decay, and a single shock of an earthquake might easily convert it into a heap of ruins. Many of the stones seem to hang so loosely in their places

that one cannot stand on them, or even go past them, without some feeling of anxiety. In some places it seems as if a puff of wind might bring them down. Only the enthusiasm of an artist could have enabled Mr. Wilsen to spend years in such a place, forgetful of all danger. Very frequently, he said, stones fell out of their places near him, without a touch, and lately, on the occurrence of a slight earthquake, a whole mass came down. He had also much to suffer from the intense heat, which between the walls was alleviated by no cool breeze.

About a mile from this temple stands the small but elegant one of *Mendut*. It is not more than twenty feet in diameter, and fifty in height, terminating in a cupola. The stones seem to retain themselves in their places by their own weight, as in the bells of Boro-Budoo. Connoisseurs admire this little temple particularly, for the elegance of the arabesques and of the three sitting figures. In the roundness of their outline, the correct proportions of the limbs, and the noble character of the faces, these statues are said to excel every work of Hindoo sculpture hitherto known. The central figure represents Buddha, the two others kings.

At this gem of Indian art we took leave of Mr. Wilsen, and drove eighteen miles further to Djogo-

karta, the capital of the so-called *free* principality of the same name.

These two territories, Djogokarta and Surakarta, formed, about a hundred years ago, one powerful nation, under the name of Mataran, but at that time the succession was disputed by two brothers, who carried on a war with each other for fifteen years. In 1752 they came to an agreement, and divided the kingdom between them. Both were to be under the *protection* of the Dutch Government, but were to enjoy much more freedom than they do now. But in 1825 the Prince of Djogokarta, partly from ambition, and partly because he had been offended by the arrogant behaviour of the Dutch, revolted, and entangled both principalities in a war with them. It lasted five years, and cost the lives of 6000 men, and millions of money, and the result to the native princes was that the Dutch took a great part of their territory, and brought them entirely into subjection. They still bear indeed the title of independent princes, but they are favoured with the assistance of a Dutch Resident, who keeps as tight a hand on them as the English Residents in India do on their *independent* sovereigns. They scarcely dare receive a visit or a letter, nay, hardly leave their own palaces, without his permission; but, as the price of their

freedom, they receive from the Dutch a large yearly pension. The Sultan of Djogokarta gets 480,000 rupees; the *Susuhunan* of Surakarta (a higher title than Sultan) 648,000.

In accordance with his obliging invitation, I stopped at Djogokarta at the house of the Resident, Mr. Hasselman, and a more splendid residence, excepting perhaps that of Samarang, I have never seen. Very likely it has been built in this grand style expressly to inspire respect for the Europeans, especially as the Sultan comes several times a year to pay the Resident a ceremonial visit, and on these occasions brings with him a suite of three or four hundred persons, one hundred of whom sit down to table.

Besides these state visits, the Sultan often pays private ones, both to the Resident, and to other European houses, and even to the club, where he likes to take part in a game of cards or billiards, and indeed in any European amusement that may be going on. When he invites Europeans to his palace, not only is there often dancing, but his wife and daughters are not excluded from the entertainment. Probably this is the only place in the world where you may see the wife and daughters of a Mahommedan Sultan waltzing in the arms of European gentlemen and

officers. The Sultana is said also to have no objection whatever to a game of whist.

November 29th. We passed the whole day in visits and sight-seeing. Madame Parvé, the mother-in-law of Mr. Hasselman, still a very lively and pleasing lady, undertook to show us the lions of Djogokarta. We began with a pleasure palace of the Sultan's, called, as all his palaces are, the *Craton.* It is surrounded by high walls which enclose gardens, baths, and all possible offices: sometimes a whole campan is found within the enclosure. This mansion is also named *Tamansari*, or the Water Palace, because it can be laid under water as far as the first story. It was built by Portuguese architects in 1754, and is less distinguished for large handsome rooms, than for its bold and solid arches and passages, that look as if they would last for ever. They are, nevertheless, in many places showing signs of decay; for the palace is no longer inhabited, and the Malays, like other orientals, never repair an uninhabited house. The only furniture I saw in it was an old wooden bedstead, which we were warned not to touch, as those who did touch it were sure to die soon. Perhaps this may only be a polite way of protecting from the curiosity of Europeans what is regarded as a kind of sacred relic, as the

first sultan who reigned over this kingdom slept in it.

From the Tamansari we went to the Gedé, the burial-place of the Sultan, as well as of the most distinguished persons of the kingdom. This place, like the Craton, is surrounded by high walls. The graves are covered by simple stone slabs, at the ends of which are perpendicular ones two or three feet high, and many of them have long wooden huts built over them, perhaps to protect the stones from the weather.

The graves of the sultans are inside a large wooden house, and many of them have canopies and white curtains. In one of the neighbouring courts a very remarkable animal is kept,—a white turtle, which the natives regard as sacred. It is so tame, that it will come when it is called to receive a gift from your hand,—at least, when it is hungry. Of course we tried our fortune, that we might see the turtle; and when we called, it appeared twice on the surface of the water, but did not touch the food, though it was held close to its mouth. The guides and some natives who accompanied us, and who had heard from Madame Parvé that I had been in Stambul and other places interesting to them, looked at me and said I must be a very wonderful person,

for the turtle to come to me twice when it was not hungry; exactly, they said, as if it wanted to see me and be seen by me. I relate trifles of this kind because they are characteristic of the people.

The turtle was about two feet in length, and nearly white, its eyes red, and its shell looking rather like leather than horn. It had several young ones, also white, one of which, by the special intervention of Madame Parvé, I obtained, and immediately preserved in spirits.

It has been asserted that these animals are white only because the piece of water in which they are kept is protected from the sun. This question might easily be set at rest by putting in some dark-coloured turtle; but I believe their descendants would be found of the same colour as themselves.

A second princely burial place, where the Susuhunans of Surakarta and their families repose, lies about three miles off. It is called *Imo-Giri*. The graves extend some hundred feet up a hill, and are placed higher up, or lower down, according to the degree of relationship to the sovereign of the occupants.

On our return home, we drove across the great square on which bazaars are held, and which are

celebrated over the whole country on account of the many beautiful articles in copper which are made in the neighbourhood and brought here for sale.

In the afternoon we were received by the Sultan in his palace, where we passed through three courts, in which were some wretched-looking wooden huts, stables, and dilapidated-looking houses.

The palace of a Javanese prince or sultan consists, first, of a hall completely open, called a pendapo, from which a few steps lead, and which has a high arched roof. This is set apart for public occasions, and contains merely tables and chairs. Opposite the pendapo is the dalem, also a large hall, but very dark, as it is only open in front, and has but a few windows, and those very low and small. This is the drawing-room of the Sultan,—the place where he receives his guests; and it is almost over-furnished, for besides chairs and tables, it has sofas, looking-glasses, clocks, pictures, &c. Several doors at the back of this apartment lead to the *probojekso*, the private apartments of the sovereign and of his wives and family. It contains a saloon, and several small chambers, all close and gloomy; and some bedsteads, mats, cushions, and pillows, constitute the entire stock of furniture. Every princely palace that I saw in Java was built of wood, and was not to be

compared for wealth and splendour with the abodes of the native princes of India.

The Sultan advanced some steps out of the dalem to meet us, took the hand of each, led us into the hall, and assigned us seats near himself. He was of a middle size, with a handsome face, rather full in person, and about thirty-two years of age. He had on a garment that looked like a dressing-gown, over this a sarang, both of silk; and for jewels, a brooch and some diamond rings. I was much surprised to find in the dalem only female attendants, dozens of whom were crouching about the floor half naked, for they had nothing on but a sarang, and that did not cover half the bosom. In the interior of their apartments, it is well known that the Mahommedan princes are only served by women or eunuchs, but to bring them into public reception rooms I thought was an unheard-of thing.

After the Sultan had conversed with us a little while, he led us into the probojekso; for he is so liberal as to allow European gentlemen to enter this sanctuary. We were presented to his wife, a girl of nineteen, and the most beautiful creature that I ever saw among either the Malays or Javanese. Her mouth was rather small, her teeth dazzlingly white, and finely formed, her nose very pretty, her eyes

large and brilliant, and only the somewhat broad and prominent cheek bones could remind you of her Javanese birth. The Sultan, it seems, forbids his family to file or stain their teeth, or to chew siri.

Besides this young Sultana, we saw two daughters of the Sultan by a former marriage, — handsome girls, between the ages of twelve and seventeen. The present Sultana has no children, and she did me the honour to have so high an opinion of me — (probably the story of the turtle had reached her ears) — that she several times requested me to pray for her, that she might be so fortunate as to become a mother. I promised it, and kept my promise, and I hope with some good result.

The ladies were all dressed in the costume of the country, with the sarang and jacket, and wore many hair ornaments, ear-rings, rings, and the like, which glittered with diamonds. The Sultana, I noticed, spoke with her husband without casting her eyes to the ground, or raising clasped hands, as if imploringly, to her forehead.

When we had had tea, the Sultan showed us his jewels and weapons, and the lady displayed her gold embroidered robes. On his bed lay beautiful specimens of the Malay weapon called a *kriss*, a knife of a serpentine shape, from ten to fifteen inches long;

and near the head of the bed stood a bust of the King of Holland. What profound regard must this Sultan feel for his royal brother!

The higher officers and attendants of this, as well as of other Javanese princes, are distinguished by a peculiar head-dress, namely, a cap ten inches high, of plaited straw, silk, or cloth of gold, according to the rank of the wearer.

On the 30th of November, we went to Solo, the capital of Surakarta, a distance of forty miles, and on our way passed near the "thousand temples," which lie near the village of Bambarang. They form a considerable group, but concerning the exact number there is much difference of opinion. Some make it 170, others 700, and, at any rate, there are certainly much less than 1000. They are small, a good deal in the style of that of Mendut, and the chief one is said to have been sixty-seven feet high, but it is now nearly in ruins. We climbed, nevertheless, to the upper zone, from which we could look into the interior, and we saw there a statue of Buddha, and several arabesques, in a vaulted hall. None of the other temples are more than twenty-four feet high, but each has its image of Buddha.

At Solo the Resident, Mr. Butschkens, could not receive me, as he was just then having his somewhat

dilapidated mansion repaired; but I found an asylum in the house of Mr. Gorebé, a missionary and translator of the Bible, and a most amiable and benevolent man, who does credit to the choice of the Missionary Society. I was especially struck with his tolerant spirit, for it is, alas! not very common to find a clergyman estimating men more by their actions than by the creed that they profess.

The situation of Solo is not so picturesque as that of Djogokarta; the plain is too extensive, and the mountains too far off, the lofty Lawas excepted, the outlines of which are distinctly visible, and which rise to the height of 10,400 feet.

The land is extremely well cultivated in these principalities, perhaps because the princes let out the land, and the farmers must be industrious, in order to pay their high rents. Much indigo is raised in both, and the clothing and dwellings of the inhabitants are fully equal to what they are in any other part of Java. Many travellers maintain that the land is much better cultivated in the Dutch territory, but I always state what appears to me to be true, and endeavour to keep my judgment free from any prepossession. The roads and bridges are also very well kept in the principalities, but this is attended to by the Dutch, as they have important forts in the two

principal towns of these *free* states. A great difference is said to exist between the ordinary Malays and the people of the interior of Java, especially the inhabitants of these small principalities. They are, according to all accounts, of better character, and more capable of attachment, as well as much handsomer, or rather much less ugly.. I had however accidentally an opportunity of seeing a good deal of the people, as a bazaar was held during my stay at Djogokarta, and here in Solo two public festivals took place; and I must honestly confess that the good folks did not appear to me at all less frightful than their brethren in Batavia. People talk of their small hands and feet, but the beauty of hands and feet does not consist in smallness alone. Their hands are so meagre that every bone seems to start out of them, the points of the fingers turn up, the feet are very flat, and the toes stand wide apart, and they have a way of twisting and distorting fingers, hands, and arms that is quite unpleasant to look at.

This laxity of limb and muscle is also to be observed in the Europeans born and brought up in this country.

Amongst the high born, in the harems of the princes, and among their servants, there are certainly handsome people and pretty children to be seen, but

these are exceptional instances, and it seems as if all the beauty to be found in the country was collected in the houses of the great.

Javanese parents usually regard it as an honour to have one of their daughters in the harem of a prince; but if they do not desire this, they have two ways to avoid it: either they must get her married at an extremely early age, or they must make a public dancer of her; in which position, singularly enough, she is protected from the advances of every man whom she does not herself favour. So far is this idea of the sacredness of a dancer carried, that if a woman wishes to be separated from her husband against his consent, she has only to become a public dancer, and he has no longer any right over her.

In no other country have I ever seen so many blind and lame people as in Surakarta; and there are also many lepers, for whom a particular hospital has been erected. The last reigning Susuhunan, I was told, took a very expeditious method of freeing his dominions from this reproach. A European lady, who was travelling through them, and was presented to the Sovereign at Solo, on being asked how she liked the country, answered, "Extremely well, except for the numbers of blind, lame, and

leprous persons I have noticed." Thereupon his Highness exclaimed that no one in future should make this complaint in his country; and, having had a number of boats got ready, with a special contrivance for the purpose, he ordered them to be laden with these unfortunate creatures, and taken to the middle of the river, where the water was let in, and the miserable passengers all drowned.

The present Sovereign has the reputation of being a remarkably just and noble-minded person, who, like Titus, regards a day as lost in which he has not performed any good action. Among his vassals, the Prince *Manghu-Negoro* is particularly distinguished and called "the independent," because he enjoys such an amount of freedom as to be able to leave his palace without the permission of the Resident. He also maintains a force of 400 horse and 800 infantry,—a greater number than the Sovereign himself. He is honorary aide-de-camp of the Governor-General, and a colonel in the Dutch service, receiving, besides his pay, a certain contribution towards the maintenance of his military force, in return for which he is expected to have his troops always ready for service. All these distinctions have been granted him for his fidelity to the Dutch in the last war, when his well-disciplined soldiers

were of great use. Good native troops are generally found far more serviceable than Europeans, as the climate agrees with them, they are content with little pay and poor food, and they bear the marches and fatigues much better.

Our first request to the Resident was to be presented to the Susuhunan, and some of his principal subjects, and we received the promise of an audience for the following day. But it unfortunately happened that hardly an hour before the appointed time, the only sister of the prince, to whom he was much attached, died, and of course the interview could not take place. We witnessed, nevertheless, some solemnities of the court during the few days we were at Solo. The first consisted in the presentation of a letter from the Sultan of Djogokartá to the Susuhunan of Surakarta. After the Resident had first made himself acquainted with the contents, the letter was wrapped in beautiful silk stuff, and laid upon a silver plate. It was then taken by the first aide-de-camp of the Susuhunan, and carried in a coach and six to the Sovereign, followed by the Resident in another carriage, and thirteen guns were fired the while in honour of the ceremony.

The second solemnity was the carrying the body of the deceased sister of the Prince to the place

of burial, Imo-Giri. The colour of mourning is here, as among the Chinese, white; and everything belonging to the procession—carriages, horses, &c.—was hung with white cotton-stuff, and all the persons who accompanied it had a white head-dress, sarang, apron, or some white rag or other upon them.

The procession was opened by a number of bearers laden with planks, beams, poles, &c., intended for the erection of a canopy or roof over the coffin of the deceased, at each station of the journey. After them came horse-soldiers*, with white scarfs and aprons; and these were followed by the state carriage of the Susuhunan, empty, the horse of the deceased lady, the canopy for her coffin, and lastly the coffin itself, covered with white drapery embroidered with gold. The coffin was borne to the outer gate of the Craton by the Princes themselves; then it was taken by the ministers; and after them by persons of less dignity, down to the servants. Many spearmen, the points of whose spears were wrapped round with white cambric, surrounded the coffin, and large parasols, from which fluttered white handkerchiefs, were held

* The troops of the Independent Princes wear the Dutch uniform, except that the men wear no shoes, and have the customary headkerchief of the country under their helmets, and sometimes long hair twisted into a knot behind.

over it, as well as over the heads of the Princes. Behind the body came a large square chest, containing eatables, destined to be in the evening, according to custom, placed on the coffin of the deceased, and a great crowd of the people closed the procession. The husband of the deceased lady, her children, relations, and the Susuhunan himself, had gone on before to the first station. The funeral would take three days, I was told, to reach Imo-Giri, which is about forty miles off.

I was very well pleased to see this ceremony, but I would rather have made acquaintance with the good and venerable Sovereign, of which I had now, I thought, no chance, since we were to take our departure the next morning; but to my great surprise, Mr. Gorebé came to announce to me that the Prince would receive us this very evening,—a favour for which we were indebted solely to the good missionary, a highly esteemed friend of the Susuhunan, who had granted it on his special request. Before we set off, we went to pay two other visits to princes, and first, to the above-mentioned Prince Manghu-Negoro, with the dignity and refinement of whose behaviour I was much struck; it was equal to that of the most cultivated European. His countenance was intelligent and acute, though ami-

able; he made many inquiries about my travels that showed a considerable amount of knowledge, and he thought proper to compare me to "a light hovering cloud." Our second visit was made to the Prince Ngabchi, the illegitimate brother of the Susuhunan, who, as the sovereign has no son, is generally regarded as the Crown Prince. We did not, however, find his Highness at home, as he had not yet returned from the funeral.

We were to make our appearance at court at half past seven o'clock, and as etiquette is here much stricter than at Djogokarta, the gentlemen of our party held their watches in their hands, in order not to come a minute too soon or too late.

At the entrance of the innermost court we were received by two ladies of the royal household, who announced that the Susuhunan was ready to see us. In the Dalem the Sovereign rose and advanced two steps to meet us, presented us his hand, and invited us to be seated. Both the Dalem and the Pendapo were illuminated; and European military music, tolerably well executed by natives, resounded through the apartments on our entrance, and was several times renewed during our stay. A few paces behind the Prince there sat, stiff and motionless as statues, and clothed only in the sarang, three ladies of the court,

holding a sword, shield, and sceptre, the insignia of sovereignty. Numbers of other women were crouching about, and among them were two nephews of the Susuhunan, — lads of fourteen or fifteen, whom I took at first for two very pretty girls. There was little in their costume to correct my mistake, as they wore the simple sarang, like the ladies, and had their hair long, and fastened up in a knot at the back of the head.

Scarcely had we taken our places, before a woman, probably also one of the court ladies, came shuffling along upon her knees, and repeated a long speech that I took for a prayer, but which I afterwards found to be an account of the funeral procession. It was mentioned herein that *the Princess* had proceeded to such and such a place, had reposed so long under the shade of a canopy, and had then continued her journey to a certain other place, where she proposed to pass the night, &c.

It is, it seems, the fashion to speak of the bodies of persons of high rank, as long as they remain unburied, as if they were still living, and moreover, to show the same attention in supplying all their personal wants. Every one who approached the Susuhunan came upon his knees, and continued in that attitude as long as they were in his sight; at least, I looked

after them as long as I could see them myself, and they never rose.

The face of the Prince quite corresponded with the account I had heard of him, and I have not often seen a more venerable and engaging physiognomy. The only thing that surprised me was, that he showed no signs of grief for the severe loss he had just met with, but listened to the report concerning the funeral with as perfectly unmoved tranquillity as if it had been concerning a matter of complete indifference. After he had conversed with us for a short time, he proposed to Madame Schmitz and myself to come and pay a visit to his wife. We found her a young woman, of not more than twenty-five, sitting in a rather dimly-lighted room on a chair, while her step-daughter, a girl of eighteen, sat by her on the ground. Neither of them was as handsome as the royal lady of Djogokarta, though certainly very good looking for Java women. Their apartments appeared to be small and scantily furnished.

In about half an hour we returned to the Dalem, and prepared to take leave, whereupon the Susuhunan made us a long speech, during which he took my hand, and at the end of it drew a ring from his finger, and put it on mine. Unfortunately, I was little the wiser for the speech, for the monarch spoke

in the Bugis language, which I did not understand, and Mr. Gorebé happened to be sitting too far off to be able to interpret for me. The visit altogether lasted two hours. The Prince wore two orders, set in brilliants, but otherwise his costume and that of his family was extremely simple.

On the 3rd of December, we drove back to Samarang by a short way across the Salatiga (sixty-six miles), and I passed the night in the house of the kind friends who had accompanied me. On the following day, at one o'clock, I found myself once more on board the steamer on my way to Surabaya, a passage of 180 miles. On my coming on board, I was saluted by the captain with great cordiality as an old acquaintance. It appeared I had gone with him from Batavia to Sumatra, but he had lately exchanged the command of the "Macassar" for that of the "Amboyna." In travelling, it is always pleasant to meet with acquaintances when you expect strangers, and all the more when they are such amiable and obliging persons as Mr. Bergnan.

There is not much to be said of the passage. We kept pretty close to the coast of Java, which appeared alternately level and mountainous, and we noticed four hills, called, from their singular outline, the Coffins, standing apart from one another in the

midst of a plain. Twelve miles from Surabaya, appeared the little town of Grisée, lying near a pleasant range of hills opposite which the non-European ships usually come to anchor.

We came to anchor in the roads of Surabaya on the morning of the 6th of December. All the other anchoring places that I had seen in Java, lie three or four miles off the town, and you have to be rowed up the stream in boats; but at Surabaya you can drive in a carriage from the mouth of the river to the town.

Mr. Resident Van Perez received me most courteously, and had even sent a carriage to meet me as far as Grisée, understanding that I was going to anchor there.

The residence, a magnificent building (though unfortunately with a very small garden), lies three miles from the town, and has a fine meadow before it, at the end of which is a statue of some heathen god that is greatly revered by the natives.

I remained in Surabaya for eight days, but without seeing anything, for the rainy season had set in, and frustrated all my projects. I had therefore no choice for the present but to continue my travels to Celebes and the Moluccas, and console myself with the hope of putting my plans in execution at some future day.

CHAP. X.

MACASSAR.—BANDA.—EARTHQUAKE.—NUTMEG PLANTATIONS.—AMBOYNA.—EXCURSION TO THE NEGERI-EMMIA.—SAPARUA.—CERAM.—TRAVELLING ON FOOT THROUGH THE INTERIOR OF CERAM.—ARRIVAL AT WAHAI.—THE ALFORES.—RETURN TO AMBOYNA.—TERNATE.—VISIT TO THE SULTAN.

On the 14th of December I took my departure by the steamer Banda for Macassar, the chief settlement of the Dutch on Celebes, a voyage of 440 miles. There was little worthy of note till we came in sight of the coast of Celebes. The vessel was very small, the sea stormy, and though I had been a traveller for many years, and had sailed and steamed thousands of miles, without having to pay tribute, I suffered as much this time from sea sickness as if I had been a mere novice. On the morning of the third day I came upon deck to greet the shore of Celebes, a monotonous plain, bounded in the back ground by mountains.

Macassar (Udjang-Pandang), the seat of the Dutch Government in Celebes, is a small, almost European-looking, town, with a fort. The Government-house is small and insignificant, and the Europeans live in poor-looking little stone houses, lying close together, along the side of a beautiful piece of meadow land, called *Hendrik's-pad.* The Protestant clergyman, Domine Mathes, hospitably took me in, but here also I was unlucky enough to hit on the rainy season, and could go no further than to visit the bazaar, where I saw a great number of the people assembled. The natives of Celebes, though belonging, like the people of Java, to the Malay race, are less ugly; their features are better, their skins of a lighter colour, and their figures tall and well formed.

Since no excursion into the interior could be thought of, on account of the rain, and I heard that the steamer "Amboyna" was going in a few days to Banda, one of the Moluccas, I resolved to take the opportunity of paying it a visit, hoping on my return to be able to see more of Celebes.

On the 21st I found myself again on board with my good friend Captain Bergnan, and in three days and a half we reached the island of Banda, without having seen anything more on the way than some

small mountainous islands. The Goonong-Api, the highest mountain of Banda (1800 feet) soon came in sight, columns of smoke rising, as they constantly do, from its north-western side. At one o'clock in the morning we entered the bay in a superb moonlight; on one side lay the volcano, on the other a pleasant range of hills, covered with nutmeg trees. The small town of Banda lies in a somewhat perilous position on the declivity of the volcano, an eruption from which would infallibly destroy it; but, strangely enough, though it smokes constantly, no eruption ever takes place. One can hardly suppose, however, that much reliance is to be placed on its peaceable intentions.

We had got in so late, that the captain went on shore with the mail bag alone, and we passengers lingered on the deck, talking and thinking much of friends far away, and of the home joys and recreations that were then going on in our respective domestic circles (for it was Christmas eve),—of the games, the presents, the joyful surprises of the little ones; when, all on a sudden, quite unexpectedly, an Arab made his appearance on board.

Rather astonished at this late visit, we all gathered round him to learn the motive of his coming. Ah! our pleasant talk was soon changed into expressions

of sorrow and alarm, for he informed us that a tremendous earthquake had taken place on the island on the 26th of November, by which many houses had been entirely destroyed, and all so much injured as to have become uninhabitable. Fortunately, it had happened at eight o'clock in the morning, when the inhabitants could fly instantly from the scene of danger, so that no human lives had been lost; but all kinds of fragile goods,—crockery, glass, lamps, cooking utensils, wines, and bottled liquors of all kinds, had been totally destroyed. While people were still under the impression of this unpleasant occurrence, a second earthquake took place at half-past eight the next morning. The water in the bay was suddenly driven back, and then forward again, with irresistible violence, towards the shore, rising at the same time four-and-twenty feet. Twice, the bottom of the sea was laid bare, while all the boats and small vessels were hurled upon the coast, and eighty persons were drowned. A large ship that lay at anchor was driven on shore, and only saved from instant destruction by the great presence of mind of the captain; but he could not save her from considerable damage, and she was still in the bay, undergoing repair. This second shock had not only thrown down many more buildings, but destroyed

thousands of the nutmeg trees, from the dashing of the salt water over them.

When the captain returned on board he confirmed every word of this melancholy narrative, and the story made such an impression on some of the passengers, that they could not sleep all night, for fear of another earth—or rather *sea-quake.**

In the morning we went ashore, and I can bear personal testimony to the desolation. Several houses lay still in ruins; all were more or less injured, and the furniture either broken to pieces or lying in heaps in the open air, the owners living opposite to it in little bamboo huts, that had been hastily run up for the occasion. The barracks and dwellings of the officers, situated about a hundred yards from the town, were almost the only habitations that remained uninjured. These are built of wood, while, strangely enough, in a place so liable to earthquakes, it is customary to build houses of stone.

The Resident, from the damaged state of his house, could not receive me, but Dr. Krause, the military surgeon, a German, was kind enough to afford me shelter in his wooden cottage.

* Stories seldom lose by repetition. On my return to Java, I read in the papers an account of this earthquake, wherein it was sated that one half of the Molucca islands had been destroyed.

I took a walk the same day towards the volcano Goonong-Api, and wished to ascend it, but Dr. Krause, who had been up it several times, on botanising expeditions, strongly advised me against making the attempt, and said it was really not worth the trouble. The mountain terminated, he said, in a closed cone, and had several clefts in its sides, from which strongly sulphureous vapours proceeded.

On the following day I visited the great nutmeg plantations of Mr. Meyer, which contain 15,000 trees. The native name for the nutmeg is *perkin*, and the proprietor of them is called a *perkenir*.* A plantation of this kind is a perfect wood; the trees, which are not planted in rows, are of considerable girth, and from forty to fifty feet high.

A tree called the nanarin tree, belonging to the canary family, which does not strike deep root, is planted to protect the nutmegs from the violence of the wind; and it produces itself a rich nut, from which is extracted á large quantity of oil, much superior to cocoa nut oil, and which can be made use of in cookery.

The island of Banda is the actual native home of the nutmeg, which here requires no care, and grows much taller and stronger than at Singapore.

* This appellation is sometimes corrupted into *park-keeper*.

The tree does not begin to bear fruit till it is from ten to fifteen years old, but it lives full eighty years. In the year before its death it is said to bear an extraordinarily large crop. On an average every tree produces about 2500 nuts a year, but there are some that yield as many as 4000. The harvest lasts the whole year round. People go in the morning into the plantations and pluck the ripe nuts, loosen the mace which completely envelopes it, and leave both nuts and mace to dry in the sun. The nuts that fall off of themselves are not worth half as much as those that are plucked. About a hundred nutmegs with the mace go to a pound, and five pounds of nuts yield one pound of mace. The nutmegs are a monopoly at Banda and the small adjacent islands. The land is given for nothing, but the perkenir receives from the Dutch Government, for one pound of mace and four pounds of nuts, only *one copper guilder*. He may farm out his plantations, but he must not cut down a single tree without the permission of the Government inspector, who visits his plantations every year, points out the trees that are to be rooted out, and determines the number of new ones to be planted. In order to induce people to attend to this occupation, in spite of these disadvantages, the Government, besides giving the land,

supplies the planters with convict labour, from criminals brought here from Java and other places, and who are let out by the month at a low rate.

The steamer was to leave Banda again on the 27th, as there was little to do here; and since, if I declined going by her, I might have months to wait for another vessel, I had to make up my mind to do so. We left in the afternoon to go 144 miles to another little island,—Amboyna; and, as the weather was very favourable, arrived there the next day.

The bay of Amboyna is sixteen miles long and about six broad at the opening; though at Amboyna, which lies half way up it, not more than one. It is encircled by low hills and mountains, the highest points of which,—the *Lytham* and *Sirigmoko*, are estimated at 3000 or 4000 feet. The hills are richly clothed with vegetation, woods alternate with meadows and spice plantations, from which the beautiful feathery sago palm, the slender areka, and the cocoa nut palm rose far above the wide-spreading foliage of other trees.

I have heard it asserted, that the entrance to Banda, and still more that to Amboyna, may vie with that to Rio de Janeiro; but though the bay of Banda is very pretty, and that of Amboyna, perhaps, still prettier, I do not think either can be com-

pared with that of the Brazilian river. If there is to be a comparison, it should be rather with that of Santos, 400 miles from Rio de Janeiro. Amboyna, which is the seat of the Government of the Moluccas, counts about 1500 inhabitants, and looks like a mere village, though it is protected by a fort, called Fort Victoria. The Governor's house is about a mile from the town, and is an insignificant little abode, built of bamboo. From the very limited accommodation at his disposal, there being in his house but one spare room, which was already occupied, I had to be lodged with Mr. Roshof, the director of the institution for training teachers for the people's schools. In the year 1835, the Dutch Government sent Mr. Roshof to establish this institution, intended for the reception of twelve native young men, who were to receive board, lodging, and instruction. The sum assigned for the purpose was placed in the hands of Mr. Roshof, without the Government requiring any account to be given of it; and at the end of the first year, he declared that the money given him was sufficient for eighteen young men, instead of twelve; and desired that six more might be sent to him. Besides these regular pupils, Mr. Roshof allows from ten to fifteen pupils to take part in the instruction, and from them he selects those of

the best capacity to be received entirely into the house. The pupils are instructed in religion, in the accurate knowledge and writing of their native Malay language, in geography, arithmetic, and psalmody.

The natives of Amboyna and the neighbouring little islands are Christians; and at present, Protestants, though formerly, under the Portuguese, they were Catholics. In every village of tolerable size a schoolmaster is appointed, who at the same time performs the office of clergyman, and leads the public worship, prayers, singing, &c. Some of the villages are large enough for the schoolmaster to have as many as 250 children under his care. In my excursions in Amboyna, Saparua, and Ceram, I visited several of the schools, whose masters had been pupils of Mr. Roshof, and I found that the children wrote nicely, appeared to have an accurate knowledge of arithmetic, and sang the Psalms very well. I could not help wishing that all our village children in Europe were as well taught as these Malay boys. The labours of Mr. Roshof have not been in vain, but have hitherto at least borne good fruit.

As Banda is the native country of the nutmeg, so is Amboyna that of the clove; and the plantation of it is a great object with the Government, which holds a monopoly of it; and every head of a family

is obliged to plant and maintain from thirty to eighty trees, according to the nature of the ground. In former days, the nutmeg was kept exclusively to Banda, and the clove to Amboyna and Saparua, and these trees were rooted out from the other islands. Now, however, they may be planted upon any of them, and are only a Government monopoly upon these two.

The clove tree lives 100 years, and begins to bear at twelve or fifteen; the harvest time is from November to January; the produce unequal — a tree yielding variously from one to twenty pounds. The cloves are dried in the shade. The planter receives now thirty doits a pound, though formerly he had to content himself with twenty-four, and even for this little increase in price he is indebted to the present Governor-General, Mr. Deimar Van Twist.

The natives of the island know how to manufacture baskets, vases, ships, and a number of pretty toys, with cloves; but they have to buy their material from the Government at an immoderately high price, namely, two rupees a pound, though even in Holland cloves can be bought for a fourth of that sum; and besides this, there is a high export duty on their little manufactures.

The nutmeg tree is now planted pretty often at Amboyna, and does very well, and the cacao tree,

whose fruit sells for sixty rupees (£6) the picul, flourishes extremely. The most important tree to the natives, however, not only at Amboyna, but in all the Moluccas, is the sago-palm, which affords the inhabitants their chief nourishment; it is to them what rice is to the Indians and Chinese, and corn to the nations of Europe. The sago-palm comes to perfection at about fifteen years old; it is then cut down and split, and the farinaceous pith or pulp taken out with a simple instrument of bamboo. Almost the entire stem consists of pulp, there being only a covering of about an inch thick round it. This pulp is then put into a kind of trough, made of the hollowed bark of the tree itself, and, by washing and kneading, the farinaceous part is made to separate from the fibrous. The water is then strained off, but, that nothing may be lost, into a second trough, where any remaining farinaceous particles may deposit themselves; and when the water is poured off from that, the work is ended. The flour or pith is then packed, quite wet, into baskets holding five-and-twenty or thirty pounds each, which are immediately rolled in the green leaves of the tree itself. One peculiarity of the sago in this state is, that it must never be allowed to get dry, and, in order to prevent this, the baskets are put from time to time into water.

From this flour, a kind of bread is prepared. For this purpose the natives make use of an iron or earthen vessel, which they allow to get quite hot; a little water is then poured in, it is filled with the sago flour, covered with leaves, kept in their places with a little piece of board with a stone on it, and this is left on the fire till a steam begins to rise, when the mess is considered done.

The preparation of another kind of food, called *papeta*, is still more simple. Some cold water is poured on the flour, and it is stirred to a thick dough; a sufficient quantity of hot water is afterwards poured on it to reduce it to a fluid state. It is then left to get cold, and is fit for use; that is to say, transformed into thick paste. Neither of these dishes, when eaten as usual, without any kind of condiment, can be considered as a very agreeable and piquant kind of diet; but it will be evident that if people can live upon such food as this, they can maintain themselves without much labour. Families that possess no sago trees of their own, can procure several hundred pounds of it with very little labour. It is common in such a case for the poor man to go to the owner of a fine tree, and offer to cut it down and get the sago, for half the produce; the offer is seldom refused, and the workman also

receives his food during the three or four days which he is engaged on the work.

As the sago-palm and the Pisang (Banana) grow without any culture, and the sea abounds in fish, it will not appear surprising that the people of the Moluccas are idler than in most other places. When you arrive in the steamer, you find the landing-place covered with lazy loitering fellows, no one of whom, even for good payment, will trouble himself to carry your luggage to the town; you must first go to the house where you intend to stop, and there look about for porters. I went one afternoon into a dozen huts one after another, wishing to buy some of the little toys made out of cloves; but in every one of these habitations I found the people either asleep or playing at cards.

On New Year's Day, 1853, we set off on our excursion to the neighbouring waterfall, *Batoo-Gantung*, which is hardly worth going to see, any more than the grotto by the side of it; but we had a walk through some fine woods, and a cold bath in the river; so that we were paid for our trouble.

In order to make myself well acquainted with the island, I walked through it from north to south; proceeding first to the village of *Emma*, eight miles off. It is customary here to make use of a kind

of sedan chair, as the roads are tolerable, for either riding or driving, for a few miles round the town. I at first declined this method, for nothing is more intolerable to me than making use of human creatures as animals of burden; but I was assured that the mountains were too steep for any European to cross on foot. I therefore compromised the matter by agreeing to take a sedan with me as a precautionary measure, and determining in my own mind to walk mostly by the side of it. The mountains certainly are steep enough; one ought to be little liable to giddiness to attempt to climb them; but I had had worse difficulties than that in Borneo and Sumatra, — and in three hours I was in the village of Emma.

The whole country between here and Amboyna consists of deep narrow valleys, and funnel-shaped hollows, which you have to be constantly climbing up and down; and there are also narrow rocky ledges to scramble along. All was covered with fine woods or luxuriant shrubs; plantations and gardens full of clove trees, and in the woods were abundance of sago-palms; while from the heights we beheld the sea on both sides of the island. The mountains consist mostly of a kind of sandstone, which is very easily worked and brought down.

The villages, or *Negeris*, as they are called here,

lie on the sides of the ravines, or on the tops of the mountains; so that the people who inhabit them can scarcely take two steps on level ground. Their smallest children would put to shame the best grown-up climber from the plain country; they really jump and leap about like Chamois goats.

I remained two days at Emma, looking for insects. The heat was very oppressive, but I bore it as well as if I had passed my whole life under the equator.

My next excursion was a longer one, namely, to Saparooa and the island of Ceram, one of the largest of the Moluccas, and which I particularly desired to visit, on account of its native inhabitants, the wild Alforas.

On the 11th of January I went by sea in the night to a small village called Passeo, lying eastward from the town of Amboyna, on the isthmus, scarcely a hundred yards wide, which divides the island into two parts. I arrived at two o'clock in the morning, and at flood tide the proas were dragged over the isthmus, and the voyage continued in good time in the morning as far as *Thamahao*, a distance of thirty-five miles. From there I walked seven miles to Saparooa, where there is a small fort, which is the seat of an assistant-resident.

A lovelier walk than this from Thamahao to

Saparooa can hardly be imagined. The entire little island is like a pleasant garden; the path is excellent, and leads through groves of fruit trees and large villages, in which the houses stand in regular rows, but separated from each other by grassy lawns and trees, and enclosed by living hedges; and from time to time you get from some high ground an indescribably beautiful view over Amboyna, Harauka, Ceram, and many other beautiful islands; and see the ocean, now land-locked as a bay or lake, — now as a broad channel,— and then again, spreading out its boundless surface as far as the eye can reach. The view sometimes reminded me of the Cyclades, in Greece, except that the plantations and exuberance of vegetation make this incomparably the more beautiful.

At Saparooa I met the governor, Mr. Vischer, who had come in a ship of war from Amboyna, on account of an insurrection of the natives being apprehended. In these distant colonies they are often exposed to much hardship and oppression from the arbitrary rule of selfish officials, and really driven into revolt: this appeared to be the case here, and the governor had determined to investigate the matter personally.

I have already mentioned, in speaking of the famine in the district of Samarang, that even when

official persons are known to have neglected their duty, and abused their authority, they need have but small fear of punishment. In disputes between them and the natives, it somehow always happens that the man in office is in the right; and for the smallest irregularity the people are reprimanded and punished as if for a serious offence. I recollect myself once seeing a native bound to a stake and about to receive fifty lashes on his naked back; and when I inquired what crime he had committed, I received a very evasive answer; from which I thought I might reasonably infer that it was not quite commensurate with the punishment.

I have heard, on the best authority, that a hundred lashes are often given, though by law the highest number to be inflicted is thirty-nine. The poor people often tremble so, when they are called before any government officer, that they can hardly speak; and I have noticed the same thing in British India. Should not persons appointed to authority in these remote outposts, where their doings or their neglect cannot well be watched over, be subject to much greater penalty when found to have violated their duty, than the natives on whom the laws of Europe have been forced at the sword's point? But so it is, all the world over; the poor and ignorant

who break laws of which they know almost nothing, are called to a strict account for the smallest offence, whilst a *gentleman* guilty of a crime is treated with all possible consideration and mildness, though his education and position really aggravate his fault.

One very disagreeable thing for travellers among these Dutch settlements (though it certainly reminded me of my dear native country of Austria) is, that you have to be everlastingly showing your passport.

At Batavia I had mine made out for the Moluccas; in Samarang, however, the operation had to be repeated, and again at Amboyna; and so on at almost every place where any official person resided. In some places this passport torment is carried so far, that a poor fisherman cannot go out to fish without one. Of course the system is a mere pretence for extortion.

At Amboyna I had requested the governor to authorise my journey to Wahay, on the north-east coast of Ceram, as I wished to visit the interior of this island, which is inhabited by the wild Alforas, more enthusiastic collectors of human heads, I understood, than even the Dyaks. Hitherto only two Europeans had ever ventured among them, and one of these had taken 150 men with him for his protection. It is

necessary to obtain some assistance of this kind from the Dutch government, as among the Alforas themselves one tribe is afraid of another, and the people will not accompany you. I would have contented myself with four companions, but the governor assured me I must have at least twenty, since unless the party were as strong as that no one would go. He added that when it was necessary to send a message to Wahay by land, twenty men are always despatched. The usual communication is by sea.

Furnished with letters to the government officers residing at Ceram, who do not hold much higher rank than a village bailiff, and carrying with me abundance of cordial good wishes, I commenced my journey on foot, on the afternoon of the 17th of January, but went then only seven miles, to a village called Noloth; and the next day I crossed the sea in a proa to Makariki, on the island of Ceram, (thirty-two miles,) where I arrived so late that I had to pass the night in my proa.

I could not go on the next day, as the twenty men who were to form my escort had to be collected, and when they were got together, they wanted the rest of the day to get ready some provisions. We took nothing with us, however, but sago-bread, pisang, and some little dried fish.

On the morning of the 20th of January I began the difficult and dangerous part of my journey, with an escort consisting partly of Malays and partly of Alforas. The people in Mahariki gave me a terrific account of the road, and said I should have to be continually walking over loose rolling stones, wading through water, or climbing steep mountains, and they prophesied that I should pretty soon turn back.

We had scarcely been travelling an hour before we came to an obstacle that, for me at least, was of the most formidable kind, namely, a broad, deep, and rather rapid river, to be swam over. I got across, however, as I had done at Sumatra, with the help of two natives, who gave me each a hand and pulled me over after them.

During this first day's journey we did not quit the plain, but our progress was not therefore less toilsome. The path led us constantly along the nearly dry bed of a usually broad stream, that now, in the dry season, had shrunk to a narrow and shallow one; and we had to walk among loose stones, and to wade through the river in its windings a countless number of times. Sometimes for a considerable tract we had not to cross but to walk along its channel. Full one third of the day's journey of eighteen miles lay through water, and yet I suffered

greatly from the heat, for we had to keep the middle of the way, and the woods through which the river ran did not extend their cool shade quite so far. Being always in woods and ravines too, we got no prospects.

In the afternoon, at four o'clock, we made a halt.* Our bivouac for the night was to be in a dry place in the bed of the river, and the Alforas soon put up three leafy bowers, in which we distributed our party, and made good blazing fires; though, alas! we had nothing to cook at them. The dark forest around, the outline of which looked still blacker when the moon rose, was certainly rather awful, but there are no dangerous wild beasts on this island, and I had no fear of an attack of the Alforas; but laid myself quietly down on my stone couch, and was soon lulled by the murmur of the stream into delightful dreams.

January 21*st.* (19 miles).—This day we had to cross the first mountain range, *Nothlong-Batai*, but the passage was not longer than nine hundred feet, and though we had to make our way through woods, the path was not a very bad one. The underwood was light, and easy to break through, and the moun-

* In regions near the equator you are obliged to halt early, as the sun sets at six, and no twilight intervenes between daylight and darkness.

tains were not so steep and rugged as those of Amboyna. I could not help admiring the skill with which the natives made their way through the labyrinth of trees with as much confidence and security as if we had been walking on a high road. From a rising ground I saw here and there little groups of native huts, consisting of nothing more than a roof of leaves, with a kind of bedstead about a foot high beneath them. Their former occupants had probably eaten up all the sago to be found in the neighbourhood, and betaken themselves to a new residence in a more productive region.

After we had crossed the mountains, our way again led through narrow ravines, and the stony beds of rivers, or, often, the rivers themselves, so that our feet were constantly wet. At noon we rested for half-an hour, and took our scanty meal. The hard sago-bread had to be softened in water, before it was possible to eat it; and when this was done, and a few bananas were added to it, the breakfast, dinner, or supper, as the case might be, was ready. My appetite, however, was always so good from the great exertions I underwent, that I did not at all feel the want of better fare.

The island appears to be rich in deer and wild hogs; for we saw many traces of the first, and still

more of the latter. Some of my people had guns, but they did not fire them; and I saw on this occasion how the natives manage to make the swiftest deer, in his most rapid flight, stop and hesitate. The creatures would stand and gaze at them as if rooted to the spot. The plan was to open suddenly and wave before them a scarlet cloth; but although at such moments the animal offers of course an excellent mark, we had this time to renounce all hopes of venison, for the good-for-nothing guns constantly missed fire. One of my Alforas, however, caught a wild hog, and a *kussuf*, or wild cat: the first he fairly outran; the latter he got by climbing a tree at least a hundred feet high. It was not hard to catch when the hunter once got near it; for it does not see in the daytime, and sat quite still till he gave it a blow on the head and threw it down; but the agility with which its pursuer climbed from bough to bough up to the very top of the tree, was admirable, though it almost frightened me to look at him.

Neither yesterday nor to-day did we meet a single living soul, and our couch for the night was once more spread in the bed of a river. This time our fires did not blaze in vain, for though the wild hog was spared for the present,—reserved for a handsome

roast, to celebrate our entrance into Wahay,— poor puss was sacrificed. The people opened it, took out the entrails and washed them, laid it on the fire to burn off the hair, then put the entrails in again, stuck it on a wooden spit, and roasted it all, without any salt to flavour it, as we did not carry any with us. They brought me a large piece, and I took a morsel of it, to do honour to their gift. It had a very strong smell, but did not taste badly, though the Malays objected so much to the odour that they would not taste it.

January 22*nd.* (18 miles).—This day we had two ranges of hills to cross; the first, the *Gorolehuway*, about 1500 feet high; the second, the *Hurali*, not more than 500. The woods in Ceram are distinguished for the girth and height of the trees, and I often stood still to gaze in astonished admiration at the stately growth of these vegetable giants. Many of their trunks were wreathed about with climbing and orchidaceous plants, but I saw no flowers. There was, however, a very curious kind of fungus, that I had never seen before. It was not very large, — of a sort of bell shape, and the inner edge *trimmed* all round with a beautiful dazzlingly white network, resembling the finest lace. I could never find a second specimen.

From the heights of the Gorolehuway I obtained a good view of the country, which is mostly very mountainous, the valleys long and narrow, with dark woods all over them, and not a trace of a hut or of human habitation.

The passage across the Hurali was far more precipitous and dangerous than that over the higher range. In many places that we had to pass, the wall of rock fell so perpendicularly to the sea, that we had scarcely room to set our feet, and if I had been liable to giddiness, I should, in all probability, have found my grave in the waters below.

On the Hurali I saw the first Alfora village, said to be the largest they have, and containing above thirty huts. I thought it must be deserted, for I neither saw nor heard anything of an inhabitant; but my companions informed me that the village was fully inhabited, and the people all at home; but that they are so shy and fearful of human approach, that at the sound of a voice or a footstep they rush into their huts and fasten the doors.

A heavy rain came on just as we got to this place, and we sought for shelter beneath the huts, which are built on stakes. We knocked and called on the inhabitants; but no answer came, no door was opened, and no living soul was to be found, though we spent

above an hour in the village; so the gratification of my curiosity had to be deferred to my return journey, when I hoped to bring with me some rajah who might have influence enough with these people to induce them to show themselves.

When we had crossed the Hurali, and were come to the sea-shore, I thought we had got over the worst of our difficulties; but this was a great mistake. The mountains and hills of Ceram frequently fall like walls sheer down to the water, and for a whole mile we had literally to walk through the surf, over rocks and crags, and the waves beating upon us so violently, that it was as much as we could do to keep our ground against them, especially as the rocks and stones were slippery from the constant washing. The end of our journey was therefore more troublesome than the beginning. Even this, however, was happily got over at last, and the last mile lay through a pretty meadow, that brought us to the village of *Passanea*.

I am afraid I shall be suspected of boasting when I say this journey of fifty miles on foot had not, on the whole, fatigued me in the least. There had been so much to see all the way, and every object that met my eyes, even the most seemingly insignificant, had such interest for me, that I really forgot my toils,

though I did sometimes admire the iron strength of my own constitution that could enable me to get through them. I lived all the while only on sago-bread and bananas, slept on the hardest of beds, and walked on an average eighteen or nineteen miles a day, which on good roads perhaps would not have been so much, but on these steep stony mountain paths were wearisome enough.

Passanea is inhabited by Malays, who usually occupy the sea-coast of the island, and the Alforas the mountains. I spent the night here at the house of the chief official man, and the next day embarked in an exceedingly small proa for Wahay. We had forty miles to go, but the sea was perfectly tranquil, and I got in quite safe at eight in the evening.

Wahay is the only settlement the Dutch have on the island; and there is here a small fort and a garrison of thirty men.

I remained in the proa, while I dispatched my letter of introduction from Mr. Vischer, to the Commandant Kern, who would not believe my messenger, when he informed him that a European woman had made the journey overland, and repeatedly assured me afterwards that "he should not have been more surprised if the sky had fallen."

I remained six days at Wahay, during which I

obtained some valuable contributions to my collection of insects; but I never caught sight of one of the wild Alforas, as they live at a considerable distance from there. The Commandant, however, promised to accompany me on my return as far as *Saway*, a place near Passanea, and thence to pay a visit to two of their villages. Mr. Kern had already lived two years at Wahay, and he had seen and heard a good deal of the manners and customs of the Alforas, and gave me an account that agreed so much with what I had observed among the Dyaks, that I feel convinced the Alforas may be classed as their descendants or collateral relatives.

The Alforas have, as I have said, like the Dyaks, a passion for collecting human heads, and esteem these valuables above every other booty that can be offered them. The most acceptable present that a lover can bring to his fair one is a fancy article of this kind; and if he cannot get a whole one, she will modestly content herself with a portion thereof. Five or six young men will frequently form a company to go on a head-hunt, and divide among them any specimen they may procure. The huts in which they keep these trophies are called Baileo; and when one goes to decay and another is built, it remains without a roof until a new head has been obtained to

place in it. Then the roof is put on, and the store of heads brought from the old Baileo.

An Alfora who goes alone on a head-hunt conceals himself, as the Dyak does, among trees or shrubs, laying himself flat on the earth, and covering himself with leaves and branches, and he will lie in wait thus for his victim for days together, without food or water.

From this ambush he flings his sharp-pointed spear, with unerring aim, at any unfortunate creature who comes in his way; and then, springing upon him from behind, cuts off the desired head. He afterwards conceals the body, with all possible care, in some solitary spot, in order to prevent the discovery of the murder.

When a whole tribe, or the inhabitants of a village, go out together on one of these expeditions, and attack another village, they generally choose the time when the men are engaged elsewhere with their field work, as they have no kind of chivalrous objection to taking the heads of women and children.

Returning home with their prizes, they announce their good fortune, from afar, by a loud piercing whistle, produced with a shell; and the women and children hasten out to see the conquering heroes

come, greet them with all due exultation, and lead them in triumph to the Baileo. The heads are then given over to the boys and girls who have passed their tenth year, and they eagerly suck away every drop of blood that may yet be clinging to them; a proceeding which, in the opinion of their parents, tends to inspire them with valour. After this the trophies are slightly roasted, cleared of the flesh, and hung up in the Baileo. The Alforas are not cannibals, and in these feasts, which last several days, they consume several wild hogs and deer.

The jaw-bones of these animals are then hung up in the Baileo, as well as the human heads. It is on these festive occasions that the boys and girls who have reached the age of ten years receive their first piece of clothing, if it can be called so. The boys have only a strip of stuff, of about a hand's breadth, given them, and the girls a kind of incipient petticoat, scarcely a foot long.

Both these articles are called *Tijdaks*.

When a man has once made a conquest of a head, he obtains the privilege of adorning his Tijdak with paintings, and his smooth wooden shield with shells. The paintings may be considered, therefore, as a sort of military order, to be conferred only on those whose hands have dripped with human blood;

like the military orders of Europe, in short,—the reward of deeds of glory.

The religion of the Alforas admits of many gods and spirits. Some tribes have priests, and a hut set apart as a temple, not indeed for any sort of religious service, but merely for the ceremony of tatooing, which is performed on all children of ten years old. They are first intoxicated with *Sagower*, a kind of palm wine; and in this state brought into the temple, where they are tattooed on the breast and arms; and when they come to their senses they are told the Good Spirit has done it. This tattooing hut must never be entered by any one but the priest and the rajah; and the tribes that dô not tattoo have neither temple nor priest.

The Alforas may have several wives if they like, but usually content themselves with one — perhaps partly because they can divorce them without the slightest difficulty. Wives, as usual among these races, are purchaseable articles, not to be had without value received in rice and tobacco. Money does not exist among them.

The Alforas kill their sick when they have no hope of their recovery. They bind the arms of the unfortunate creatures down between their knees and in this position leave them till death comes to

release them from their sufferings. When dead they are either burnt or carried to the top of some high steep rock.

The various tribes of the Alforas form a sort of confederation, and have one king for the whole island, and a rajah for every village. They are said to have some good laws, and to show much respect to their persons in authority, though they do not allow them much real power. On the whole the Alforas are represented as a good and honest people, of very fair morals, and the only ones in Ceram who practise some little agriculture. They raise rice, tobacco, ubi, and maize, which they exchange with the lazy Malays for cocoa-nuts, bananas, coloured handkerchiefs, and glass beads.

During my stay at Wahay news came to the Commandant that some of the Alforas had attacked a village belonging to another of their tribes, and carried off five heads. The Dutch government seldom takes any notice when they make free with heads in this way among themselves, and but little when they take possession of a few belonging to the Malays; it is too feeble on this island to interfere with any effect, and even were a stronger force at the command of the Dutch it would be very difficult to bring these mountain tribes to obedience, for at

the slightest pursuit they withdraw into inaccessible spots in the mountains; and they can find food everywhere, for the sago-palm grows in such quantities that much more is wasted than consumed. There is no want of game either, as there are no fierce wild beasts that might prevent its increase.

A short time before I arrived at Wahay three Malays had been killed by Alforas, and the Dutch authorities had taken prisoners two of the rajahs belonging to the offending tribe. But they could not be brought to understand our view of the case; and at last it was thought best to leave them to be judged by their own laws, which condemn the culprits to pay to the relations of the murdered man certain damages in rice, tobacco, and earthen pots and pans.

The Dutch government does not derive the smallest benefit from the island of Ceram—no spice is raised there, and no taxes are paid. The fort at Wahay merely serves to secure them a footing on the island, and to enable them to rank it among Dutch possessions.

On the 30th of January I left Wahay, accompanied by the Commandant, Mr. Kern; but we had scarcely got a quarter of a mile from the shore when there arose such a gale of wind that we were obliged to

endeavour to run in again. This, however, was no very easy matter, for the coast is everywhere covered with rocks, reefs, and abruptly rising cliffs—so that it was not without both toil and danger that we were enabled to get into a little bay, where we remained the whole of the day and night, and did not get into Saway till the following morning. Thence we visited, as we had planned to do, two Alforas villages, called *Massitulan* and *Opin*, which lie near Saway, upon small but almost perpendicular hills.

The huts of the Alforas are small, and built, like those of the Malays, on piles. The walls are made of the ribs of the sago leaves, and the roofs of the leaves themselves. In the interior you find only a few mats and earthen pots, a parang, bows and arrows, a lance, and a wooden shield four feet long and six or eight inches thick.

The Alforas are not so ugly as the Malays, and I have even seen some well-formed faces among them. Their figures are slender and well-proportioned, and among the girls there are really some pretty creatures. Their complexion is light brown; they have fine black eyes, white teeth, and thick black hair that is never cut. The men do up their hair in a kind of club in the front, increasing the size of the knot by putting a bunch of rice straw under it, and they

then pass a handkerchief round their heads in such a neat and clever manner that the bunch of hair remains sticking out at the top like a cockade. A man who has taken two heads may also decorate his head-dress with shells. The men do not all wear the handkerchief or the hair cockade; they sometimes leave it to hang down loosely, which gives them a very wild aspect. Their thick, long, and somewhat ragged *chevelure* falls over their faces and flies about with every movement. But though their hair is so abundant, their beards are very scanty, but it does not appear that they pluck them out as the Malays do; indeed, I saw some who appeared to be cherishing a kind of moustache, and to take no little pride in it too. The women twist their hair into a knot behind.

Both sexes go as nearly as possible in the state of nature; for they have nothing more than the narrow strip of stuff for the men, and the foot long petticoat for the women, which I have already spoken of, under the name of Tijdak; and when they marry, even the Tijdak is thrown off, and they have not so much as this apology for a garment.

There were few heads (without bodies) to be seen in these two Alfora villages; and in one the

Baileo stood without a roof for want of this indispensable decoration.

The Rajah of this village is much attached to the Dutch government, and will not, therefore, allow his people to seek for heads among the Malays; nay, he even desires to do away with the custom altogether, but has not hitherto been able to bring over his countrymen to his opinion. He received, however, from the Commandant a present of some old European clothes and other trifles, as an acknowledgment of his good intentions. As he had been informed of our coming, he had managed to hang all this finery upon him. He had an ancient pair of breeches that reached nearly down to his ankles, and a waistcoat and coat that he could have wrapped twice round him. On the latter he had managed to fasten some bits of coloured cord and gold lace, and on his head he had mounted a little peaked cap, with a white cock's feather. Altogether his appearance was very comical, and he assumes this state costume, I was told, whenever he comes before the Commandant. His every-day dress is, none at all. The women and girls, too, a few of whom showed themselves on the persuasion of the Rajah, had managed to hang on a few handkerchiefs and other scanty articles of attire; but when I after-

wards saw them at Hurali, they were all stark naked.

In the afternoon we went to Passaneo, where the Commandant left me to return to Wahay, and I set out on my foot journey to Wahhariki; but before his departure, he induced the Rajah of this place to accompany me to Hurali, in order to get the Alforas out of their huts and procure me an opportunity of making acquaintance with this wild and shy people.

At Passaneo I again met my Alfora guides, who had waited there for me; and now that I knew the meaning of the shells and paintings that adorned them, I saw that there were among them some famous sportsmen for their peculiar kind of game.

When we came to Hurali there was again not a creature to be seen; and the Rajah was obliged almost to drag the people by main force out of their huts. I went into several of these habitations, expecting, as Hurali is considered the chief place of the Alforas, to find something more of opulence than at Opin and Massitulan; but the simplicity, or rather destitution, was equally striking. Their excessive fear, too, was painful to witness. The children ran from me screaming as if for their lives; and it was as much as the Rajah could do to induce the grown-up girls to stay and hold out their hands to me. The

constant danger they are exposed to of an attack from some hostile tribe, is doubtless the cause of this immoderate timidity and distrust. They seem to dread the sight of a human face.

They led me into the Baileo, which, compared with the size of the neighbouring huts, has the dimensions of a palace, for it is sixty feet long and forty broad; and here I counted, shuddering, a long garland of 136 skulls that have been collected, of course during many years. On the walls were hanging innumerable jaw-bones of wild hogs, deer, &c., that had been consumed in the various banquets held in honour of the victories. These heads and jaw-bones, and the fire-places where the heads are roasted, are all that is to be seen in the Baileo. The hut of the Rajah was also tastefully fitted up with a decoration of human skulls.

I wished much to see the festive dance which the Alforas perform on these occasions, and the young men were not disinclined to gratify me. They were soon ready with musical instruments, consisting of shells and a drum; and they had begun to beat on the latter, and to draw from the shells some piercing tones, when the elder people, and especially the Rajah, interfered. They seemed to think, that if

this dance should be performed in jest, some one would soon fall victim in earnest.

To make me amends for the disappointment, the Rajah undertook to show me, himself, the way to attack an enemy. He armed himself with shield, parang, and lance, and holding the two former in his left hand and the lance in his right, he hid himself with great caution behind a tree, having first looked about on all sides. Then he lay down on the ground, covered himself with leaves and branches, and put his ear to the ground. After a while he raised himself a little, as if he perceived the approach of his prey, drew back again for a moment, and then suddenly flung his spear, rushing forward immediately afterwards, and making a stroke with his parang, as if to perform the decapitation. He then picked up the imaginary head, which this time was a stone, and presented it to me.

I begged the Rajah to introduce to me the most renowned *headsmen* of his tribe, and he pointed out some of the men who were sitting round me; and told me this one had conquered two heads; that one three; but *he himself only one.* My astonishment when I heard of this fact, and looked at the mild, goodnatured face of this man, can hardly be expressed. The other heroes, too, looked as modest

and complacent when their deeds were alluded to, as if the most amiable and praiseworthy actions had been in question. The cutting off a head is, in their eyes, what the winning a battle is in that of a European general, or sabreing his enemy in that of a soldier. Is there, in fact, much difference?

I took a cordial leave of these people, who, this one propensity excepted, may be accounted good and inoffensive; and set forward again on our journey; but scarcely had we, in the evening, lain down to rest, when we were awakened by the man who had been set to keep watch. He pointed to the forest, in which, to our terror, we saw a faint light glimmer.

My people sprang up directly and seized their weapons, but there soon appeared before us some half-dozen Alforas, with pieces of burning wood in their hands, who told us that they had seen a large party going out, probably, to cut sago trees, and, recommending us to be cautious, they went away. The guide, who had been given to us at Saparooa, and who was the worthiest and best Malay I ever met, immediately had our still glimmering fire put entirely out, ordered three men to keep watch on each side of me, and the rest to lie down at a very short distance. We were, however, all so thoroughly worn out with our day's journey—for we had crossed

both mountain chains—that, in spite of all dangers, the whole party, sentinels included, was soon fast asleep. The night passed quietly, however, but the return journey was made with such rapidity, I do not know whether from fear or from any other cause, that at eleven o'clock in the morning on the third day, we arrived at Mahariki. The last six or eight miles we came by a different route from that we had followed on setting out, through woods entirely of sago-palms.

I rested one day at Mahariki, and on the following day returned to Noloth in Saparooa.

On the 6th of February I got to Saparooa itself, where I met the Governor, who received me with joyful astonishment. The first question was—"Have you then really been to Wahay?"

"Here is what will convince you," said I, smiling, and handed him the letter from the commandant of the fort.

There was a grand banquet this evening in Saparooa, for the Governor was to leave the island the following morning, and had invited all the regents and schoolmasters. These people were all natives, but they appeared in black European costume, with the exception of three, who wore military uniforms, as belonging to the burgher militia.

I could not but admire the deportment of these men in their stiff foreign dress, as well as the propriety of their behaviour at table. They handled the knives and forks as cleverly as if they had been accustomed to them all their lives; and there was really little but their brown skins and Malay cast of face to remind you that you were not in European company.

On the following morning a great number of the people had assembled at an early hour before the house to entertain the Governor with a dance, in order to express their thanks for his visit to the island. There were abundance of dancers, both male and female, and the latter were so covered with finery that it was evident they had scraped together for the occasion every ornament they could possibly muster. They had on their heads crowns of brass plates adorned with fringes and flowers, and bits of coloured stuff figured as aprons; but they performed only the sleepy monotonous Malay dance—the end of which I think no mortal patience could ever wait for. The gentlemen were, if possibly, still more oddly *got up*. They had brass helmets, with monstrously high feathers, coloured aprons, little round wooden shields, with bits of white paper pasted on them, and wooden parangs decorated with flowers.

The dance they performed was somewhat more animated than that of the ladies. The garrison of the fort, consisting of fifty men, was also drawn up, and the regents and schoolmasters surrounded the Governor, and the whole body accompanied him with dancing and music to the sea-shore.

He was to go afterwards to visit other islands; and I also left Saparooa the same evening, and the following day greeted once more the amiable family of Roskolt.

I had now enjoyed abundant opportunities of seeing the people of the Moluccas, and I may therefore assert that they are superior in personal appearance to the Malays of Java, Borneo, and Sumatra. They are of a light-brown colour, their eyes dark-blue or black, and their figures well formed, as, indeed, figures mostly are among nations who do not distort them by unnatural dress. The odious custom of blackening and filing their teeth does not exist among them; the chewing siri is not carried on with so much enthusiasm as among others of the Malay race, and I never saw their women smoke.

I had read and heard that the Christians among the natives of Amboyna dressed in a most absurd manner—in a kind of mock European costume, and that the men were especially addicted to the round black hat. But this is not the case, as far as my

observations have gone. The gentlemen do sometimes wear the garment commonly considered most indispensable, but generally no hat at all; and the women are chiefly distinguished by a somewhat longer kabay. Travellers are anxious to find something remarkable, and are often over hasty in their generalisations from one or two instances.

The food of the natives of the Moluccas is not very varied or abundant. They have a little poultry, a few pigs, but no horned cattle — those which are on the islands belonging to the Dutch. Besides their sago, they have little more than fish, some fruits, and red pepper.

A short time ago a sago manufactory was established at Amboyna, where the finest sago flour, as well as the pearl sago, was made; but it was found that these articles could not be produced here as cheaply as at Singapore, although the sago grows wild in the island, and at Singapore has to be imported.

The reason probably is that at Singapore there are plenty of industrious Chinese workmen, while here the lazy Malays can only be tempted to work by exorbitant payment.

On the 3rd of March I left Amboyna, and once more by the steamer of the same name, to go by the way of Ternate to Kema on Celebes. The passage

of 260 miles we made in fifty-four hours, passing many islands and islets, upon some of which I noticed steep, spherical-shaped mountains, sometimes rising sheer out of the sea. Many stood quite apart from any other, reminding me of those I had seen at Sarawak.

The entrance to Ternate is very picturesque; the bay is encircled by mountains more than 5000 feet high; amongst them the Tidore and the Ternate; the latter a volcano that is frequently smoking. At the foot of this rather dangerous neighbour lies the little town of the same name.

The Dutch have a fort here and a Resident, but, like the island of Ceram, it is a mere burden to them, and only retained out of political considerations. There is also a native sultan on the island, whom they have hitherto left in peaceable possession of his country, and paid him a pension of 10,800 rupees into the bargain.

We remained at Ternate a day and a half, which I spent in the most agreeable manner, in the house of Mr. Goldenau, the Resident. In the evening we paid the Sultan a visit, and he sent a convenient European carriage to fetch us, which he had formerly received as a present from the King of Holland; but, as there are no horses on the island (a deficiency

that had not been remembered in Holland), the only way for the Sultan to make use of the equipage, is to harness men in place of the customary quadrupeds. To my great astonishment, the carriage was, at the appointed hour, driven and pushed up to the door by more than twenty of the Sultan's subjects. We took our seats, and went along at such a good pace, that I should never have guessed to what kind of locomotives we were indebted, had I not seen them.

The Sultan's house is built of stone, in the European style; and he himself wore a complete European costume, except that he had a turban instead of a hat.

He came out on the staircase to receive us, offered me his arm, and led me, with much decorum, to the saloon of reception. Here he had to leave me, as he could not, according to etiquette, place a woman by his side. His daughters, however, took his place (as the Sultana his wife was ill), and led me to the end of the room, the gentlemen being seated opposite to us at the other end. Tea and sweetmeats were presented, and then two dances were performed in our honour.

The first, the Menaré, was danced by twelve prettily dressed girls, who wore loose pink silk robes, broad white collars, and pink and green scarfs and

aprons. They had broad golden girdles round their waists, and a gold plate on the bosom, besides armlets of the same metal. On their heads they had a kind of narrow coronet with many peaks and points; and a gold plate hung down behind, over their hair, which was decorated with flowers. They had also fans sticking in their girdles.

The dance was tolerable lively for a Malay one. It had figures something like those of a quadrille, and the dancers made use in it of their aprons and fans. But all was done with constantly downcast eyes, without much grace, and to the accompaniment of a screeching song, two tambourins and a fife. The musicians were women.

The other dance, the *Tjakalele*, dates from the Portuguese time, though it has undergone some alterations. It is performed, along with a kind of prelude, by ten dancers, and is pretty enough to be compared with some of our best ballet-dances. The costume of the performers consisted of orange-coloured trowsers and caftans, the latter open at the four sides, coloured ribands and scarves, and three-cornered felt hats, with white plumes. Each dancer held a wooden sword in his hand, and had a coloured silk handkerchief fastened to each arm.

The dancer who figured in the introductory part

had a pink caftan instead of an orange-coloured one; and, instead of one scarf, two; as well as two plumes upon his hat, and two handkerchiefs to each arm. The dancers made very skilful and complicated figures and groups, stamped from time to time upon the ground, and made strokes at each other with their wooden swords, as if representing a combat. In the conclusion they formed with them a kind of litter, upon which the first dancer sprang, and was borne in triumph from the scene. The music consisted of two violins and a fife, played by men.

The servility of deportment at this court is by no means so great as at Surakarta; the people did not kneel down till the Sultan came quite near them, and he was not served by women but by men, who stood upright behind him.

When I took my leave, the Sultan's daughter accompanied me to the door of the drawing-room, and there the Sultan himself again offered me his arm, and led me to the carriage.

I saw with astonishment that the roads were lighted up, although I had not noticed in coming any such luxury as lanterns, but when we came near the lights the riddle was solved. There were no lanterns, but, instead of them, living candelabras, namely, men, who stood all along on each side, holding torches.

The people of Ternate live much on sago, though rice and maize are also raised. The country is fertile, but little cultivated, and in all places of this kind the articles of diet to which we Europeans are accustomed are of course immoderately dear. Little or no vegetables are raised, and very few of the people trouble themselves about breeding poultry, pigs, or cattle. A pound of beef would cost sixty doits, and a bottle of milk forty. Servants' wages are also very high, and they mostly have to be sent for from Java.

We left Ternate on the evening of the 7th of March, and reached Kema in Celebes on the following morning. The distance is 94 miles.

CHAP. XI.

CELEBES. — MANADO. — JOURNEY TO THE HIGHLANDS. — THE DUTCH MISSIONARIES. — MACASSAR. — JOURNEY INTO THE INTERIOR OF CELEBES. — MAROS. — THE CHOICE OF A REGENT. — TANETTE BARRU. — FESTIVAL OF TEETH FILING. — PARÉ-PARÉ. — THE LEARNED MALAY KING.

CELEBES is a large island, lying across the equator from 2° north latitude to 6° south, and divided into long peninsulas by the incursions of the sea. Kema lies at the north-eastern point in the Residence of Merehatta, though the seat of the Resident is twenty miles off, at Manado, where the ships go to during the eastern monsoon. In the western they come to anchor at Kema.

It is a very insignificant little place, and I found here only one official person and one missionary; the first I had met with before in the Dutch settlements. He was a German (a Mr. Hardy), and he invited me immediately to his house, where I remained two days, and then rode quite alone to Manado. The way led me through beautiful broad

valleys, planted with rice, coffee, and maize, and fine mountains rose round me, amongst which were the *Klabat* twins, of 5000 feet high. The sago palm grows wild here too; but this liberality of nature does not seem to render the people quite so idle as those of the Moluccas, and they live chiefly on rice and maize. With the coffee there is more trouble than elsewhere, and every head of a family must plant and maintain 500 trees. They get indeed ten copper guilders for the picul of coffee, but twenty-five doits of this go to the Regent and the Inspector. Every native must also pay six florins a year for his hut to the government, and two to the Regent. It must be confessed Holland has acted in a very step-mother fashion to the people of this island.

I had an invitation for Manado from the Resident, Mr. Andriesen, but as Manahassa is renowned for its fine scenery, I wished to see something of that also, and therefore undertook a little journey to the Highlands, having an ascent to make of about 2,300 feet to reach the Lake Tondeno.

On the 14th of March I rode, in company with the missionary Mr. Schwarz, a German, by *Latho-Tomohan* and *Lahendon* to *Sonder*, a distance of twenty-three miles. From Latho the road began to rise, and some wonderful views over land and sea

to present themselves. The finest point is on the height near Lahendon. A large fertile valley lies at your feet, girdled by mountains, and among them is an active volcano, the Saputan, and the Lohore, of 5000 feet high. Cultivated hills, woods, and groves, with rich fields of rice and maize, and large handsome villages are scattered among them on all sides, and beyond lies the lovely little lake of Lahendon, glittering like a diamond in its green setting.

At Tomohan we stopped to dinner at the house of the missionary Mr. Wilkin, also a German, and in the afternoon made a little excursion to visit the lake, which is about a mile in diameter. Some mud springs lie on the opposite side, and I got myself put across the lake in a little canoe made of the hollow trunk of a tree, in order to see them; but the mud was quite dry. There was not even the smallest puff of vapour to announce the presence of a spring. The springs are said, nevertheless, to be, in rainy weather, tolerably active; though by no means so much so as ten years ago. At that time an Italian count who was here paid the forfeit of his life for his visit to these springs. He ventured, notwithstanding the warnings of his guide, too near, sank above the ankles in the boiling mud, and died in a few months of the wounds thus occasioned. Besides

these mud springs, there is a small hot sulphur spring to be seen close to the lake.

At Sonder I remained at the house of the missionary Mr. Graafland, as Mr. Schwarz wished to go eleven miles further to Langowang, where he resided. I went there afterwards with Mr. Schwarz, and again saw, about a hundred yards from the road, sulphur springs, which have formed several basins, the largest of which is about twenty feet in diameter. Here the mud is constantly boiling up; and near Langowang are some sulphur springs of equally high temperature. The water is as clear as crystal, and you can look far down into its rocky basin. The smell of sulphur is stronger in it than the taste; and the people in the neighbourhood make use of it both for drinking and cooking, though they say that it gives pain in the stomach to those who are not accustomed to it.

At Langowang I found an asylum in the abode of the kind and excellent Mr. Schwarz.

On the 17th of March I rode to Romboken, on the beautiful Lake Tondano, eight miles from Langowang. The lake is nine miles long and four broad, and obtains its supply of water from thirty little rivers and a spring in its centre, at which spot, it is said, no bottom can be found with the lead. It

is prettily *set* in hills and mountains, decked with never-fading green.

At Romboken the missionary Mr. Noe was waiting for me with a boat, in order to take me to his house at Tondano, four miles off; and on the way thither we were overtaken by a truly tropical rain, accompanied by an extremely cold wind. I was seized with a violent shivering, and, after that, the malignant Sumatra fever came on me for the seventh time (I had had it also at Amboyna). I had longed intensely to get to Tondano, and on my arrival went straight from the boat to my bed. Towards evening I felt better, and went to pay a visit to Mr. Riedl, another German missionary settled here.

As this fever is of the intermittent kind I was able the next day to undertake a walk to the waterfall of Tondano, about two miles off.

The environs are wildly romantic. The river rushes over a rock eighty feet high, and plunges down into a cauldron from which the rocks rise perpendicularly on all sides, and which is altogether inaccessible. The fall can only be viewed from above, where an open wooden hut has been erected for curious visitors. There is a second less considerable fall; and about a hundred feet from the latter a bridge is carried across the river, whence you

obtain a good view of both. The river is hemmed in between rocky walls, and the power of the water in this rapid fall has worn in them great openings, through which it rushes as through sluices.

In the afternoon I rowed along the whole length of the lake as far as Kakas, whence I returned on foot to Langowang. This was my last excursion during my stay in the Residence of Manahassa. I should have done more, but the fever attacked me repeatedly. All that I saw of the country pleased me extremely: it is rich in natural beauty, has a moderate climate, and a good productive soil. The villages are handsome and cleanly, the houses, though built on stakes, spacious, and as well kept as I have ever seen in these countries. Many of the native houses, though built only of the ribs of sago leaves, were so large and neat, that I took them for the habitations of Europeans. Some of the villages contain 2000 or 3000 inhabitants; the houses stand in rows, and are separated by trees and hedges—the most beautiful hedges of roses, which run along the whole length of the rows of houses. Good broad paths lead in all directions to seventeen villages, in each of which there is a *Logee House*, as it is called; that is, one built for the Resident, who comes into

this country very frequently to visit the coffee plantations.

The natives are partly Christian and partly heathen. They are called Alforas, but I found in them little resemblance to the Alforas of Ceram. They have no taste for collecting heads either; and they are by no means so ugly as the Malays; as they leave their teeth unfiled and unstained; and though they do chew *betel*, they are not immoderately addicted to the indulgence. The character of these people I heard everywhere praised as honest and trustworthy; they perform their labour for the government willingly, and their morals in other respects are very pure. In costume they do not differ from their brethren on Ceram; nor do the Christians among them from the other Christians of the Moluccas.

Manahassa has a population of 110,000 souls, of whom about one-third have, during the last twenty years, become Christians. Even in the time of the Portuguese there were many; but, for want of priests to continue their instruction, they fell back afterwards to heathenism. The first missionaries, Messrs. Schwarz and Riedl, were sent here from the Missionary Society of Holland in the year 1831; and Mr. Schwarz alone has had the satisfaction, during

the twenty-two years of his labours, of baptizing 9000 persons.

The mode of life of the missionaries here appeared to me incomparably better suited to the object they have in view than that of the American and English missionaries I have known in India, Persia, and China. They establish themselves permanently in one place, and do not go running about, a hundred or two hundred miles, to preach to people who have had no previous instruction, and therefore understand scarcely anything of the long discourses addressed to them. When their sphere of action has become so much extended that they can no longer fulfil all its duties, they request the Society to send them an assistant; and thus the work goes on, step by step. It was begun by the two gentlemen I have mentioned, and now ten missionaries are found scarcely sufficient.

Dutch missionaries receive a very moderate salary from the Society, and live in very modest style, without any of the grandeur and luxury of the American and English preachers of the Gospel to the heathen; but their flocks draw towards them with so much the more confidence, as there is not so strongly marked a difference in their external position. There was a Sunday among the days that

I spent at the house of Mr. Schwarz; and in the afternoon, after divine service, the natives came to pay visits to the family, and talked in the most confiding manner for hours, quite as if they belonged to it.

Every missionary has five or six of the young men, and as many girls, in his house; the former are educated as schoolmasters, the latter instructed in all useful domestic employments, those only excepted which, though useful elsewhere, might not be so here. These young people live constantly with the family of the missionary, and are treated as his own children; though care is taken that they shall not be unfitted for their future position by the enjoyment of too many of the conveniences of civilised life, to which they have of course not been accustomed.

The missionaries here do not hold meetings once or twice a week, but once or twice a year, and they do not think it necessary to carry wife and children and their entire domestic establishment with them. The gentlemen meet, and spend two or three days together in the discussion of the affairs of their missions, and then each rides home again. They do not always think it beneath their dignity even to marry well-brought-up native young women. Madame Schwarz has not the good fortune to be of

European descent, but she fulfils all the duties of her position as well, or perhaps better, than the wives of other missionaries; and neither she nor her children find it necessary to have change of air and take voyages to Europe for the benefit of their health; a vast saving to the Missionary Society, for the perpetual travellings of the wives and children of missionaries constitute an important item in their expenditure.

I saw the wives of the missionaries here visiting the sick, dressing the most disgusting wounds and tumours, and performing similar offices of Christian charity; and after my visit to this country I began to feel much more real respect for missionaries than I had ever done before. I began to see what an infinite amount of real good they can effect, when they devote themselves to the office from pure and conscientious motives, and not, as is too often the case, from the desire to obtain a handsome income by a very easy mode of life.

The government of Manahassa concerns itself, I am sorry to say, very little about the education of the people; the schoolmasters receive their salaries from the Missionary Society, and are not even exempted from the house-tax for the cottages they occupy. Yet the salaries are so extremely small,

that they could not be found very burdensome to the government, being only for the first class ten rupees a month, and for the subordinate seven or even four.

After spending five days with this dear, amiable family, I set out on the 23rd of March on my return journey to Manado, Mr. Schwarz accompanying me ten miles on my way; and then we parted, and took as kind a farewell as if we had been friends for years.

I dined at the house of Mr. Wilkins, who had formerly invited me, and in the evening I reached Manado (thirty-four miles). I was received by the German missionary Mr. Linemann, with whom I was to visit the other stations, and we were just ready to set off when we were informed that the steamer for Macassar would be here some time during the month; so that I had to remain and wait for it, and give up the excursions from which I had promised myself so much pleasure — a circumstance the more vexatious as day after day passed and no steamer made her appearance. She did not come till the 9th of April, and I went on board the following morning.

The six hundred miles' voyage to Macassar we made in three days; and on landing I was received with open arms by Dr. Schmitz and his wife. I had previously heard that he had been appointed to the

office of director of the hospital there. I remained with them, however, only a few days; for, as I had previously visited Macassar, my object in coming again was to make myself acquainted with the interior of the island.

The part of Celebes which is independent of the Dutch is divided into three states, *Bonni*, *Goa*, and *Sidenring*, and these are again subdivided into many smaller ones, whose kings or rajahs are subject to the rulers of the larger.

The sultans or kings of these states are allies of the Dutch, but permit neither resident nor fort in their territories, and have hitherto maintained a complete independence. I purposed to visit them, as well as the mountain district Dari, whose wild inhabitants are said to live in caves, and to occupy the very lowest grade of civilisation.

Without the permission of the Dutch authorities, however, you are not allowed to enter either their own dominions or those of their allies; so I solicited the requisite credentials from Governor Bick, who was immediately ready to afford them for Goa and Sidenring, but Bonni he excepted, as his government was not just then on the best of terms with this Sultan,—the most powerful of the three, and who can bring into the field a force of 40,000 effective soldiers.

Provided with letters from the Governor to sundry rajahs and kings, I set off, accompanied by an interpreter and a native of Celebes, and rode as far as Maros (17 miles). Maros and Macassar lie on the same plain, which is covered with a boundless extent of rice-fields. I was the more surprised at this extensive cultivation, as I had seen very little rice planted in the villages, and so large an amount of human labour is requisite to get in the harvest; for here, as in Java, every ear is cut singly.

The rivers *Tello* and *Maros* intersect this plain, and, as there are no bridges anywhere, we had to cross on boats, and let the horses swim through.

At Maros I alighted at the house of the Assistant Resident Count Bentheim, who lives in a very handsome edifice of which he has been himself the architect and builder. It has a handsome colonnade, and fine lofty apartments, and far exceeds in beauty the residence of the Governors of Macassar and Amboyna.

The continual rain detained me at Maros six days; a longer time than I meant to have passed there; and it was very fortunate that this bad weather overtook me while I was enjoying the society of this charming family, and could therefore so well reconcile myself to the misfortune; and not when I was depend-

ent on the hospitality of a Malay king or rajah. So far was I from regretting my stay, that I could not help some feeling of the kind when the re-appearance of the sun gave the signal for me to continue my journey. During my stay at Maros I visited a grotto, lying three miles off, at *Bulu-Sysong*. The rock containing this grotto stands as isolated in the beautiful plain as if it had fallen from heaven. It is about 80 feet high, and 300 in circumference; and when the English had possession of the country they used it as a fortress, turned the grotto into a barrack, and mounted their guns on the top of it. The roof of the grotto is supported by irregular columns of stalactite, and many crags of various shapes. It is very pretty; but now serves only as the abode of innumerable bats and other "birds of night."

An election for the office of rajah took place while I was in the house of the Count. One of the rajahs wished to obtain, as well from his government as from his people, the assurance that after his death his title and office would pass to his son, and on that account desired to have him elected during his own lifetime.

The Regent, and the elders of the entire district, assembled, therefore, for this purpose in the house of

Count Bentheim; every one was asked separately for his opinion and his vote, and the Rajah's son was unanimously chosen. He had sat apart while the negotiation was going on, and when the happy result was announced to him, he drew his kriss, and took the oath of fidelity.

The people are not much oppressed by the government here; they have the tenth part of the produce of their harvest to pay in kind, but they are not required to work gratuitously, either at roads, bridges, or houses. Coffee, sugar, and spice plantations are free, but nothing is to be seen of any of these productions. The natives want nothing but rice, and cultivate nothing else, for they greatly prefer their ease to their profit. This seems to afford a presumption that, if the government gave up the monopoly system, and no longer compelled the people to labour, the effect would not be, as is sometimes imagined, that production would be increased and prices diminished, but, on the contrary, on all the islands, Java not excepted, most of the plantations would in all probability speedily go to ruin.

As to the monopoly system in general, and the good and evil of the Dutch mode of government, — as a woman, and with a very insufficient amount of knowledge on such subjects, — I will not venture to pronounce any opinion; but, without reference to this

special case, I am inclined to think that constraint of any kind on a people is a species of injustice; but where is the government in the world that does not employ any? I am afraid no one has ever yet been carried on with the purely philanthropic view of making the people happy. The question with respect to colonies always has been, and is — What advantage can we get out of the country and its inhabitants? England endeavours to obtain as much as possible from her colonial possessions, so do the French and the Spaniards; and it is not surprising that the Dutch form no exception to the general rule.

Why so much should have been said of the severity of the Dutch government in India I cannot at all understand, for it seemed to me much less severe than the governments in many other countries. In British India, for example, every single fruit-tree is taxed, and the farming system is very oppressive to the smaller farmers. In the Dutch Indian possessions the natives have certainly also much to suffer; but their contributions are mostly in labour, which is less burdensome to them than a demand for money payments would be. It must, too, not be forgotten that of late years much has been done for the improvement of the condition of the natives. In many provinces the peasant is the proprietor of his cottage

and land, and can sell them if he pleases; in others the ground is cultivated at the expense of government, and the harvest divided. In districts where neither coffee, tea, sugar, nor spice can be cultivated, or where they are not monopolies, the fifth of the harvest, or sometimes only the tenth, and that in kind, is delivered to the government. Where these articles are monopolies the government claims from the peasant a very small tax on his own possessions, or frequently none at all; but he is required to work on the government lands, or on the plantations hired from the government, for which he receives a trifling compensation.

The heaviest burden on the people is the labour in the coffee plantations, on the roads and bridges, and at the magazines and residences of official persons, and so forth. In the former they have to remain, for two or three months in the year, fifteen or twenty miles off their homes; but the government pays them a small fixed sum for every picul of coffee delivered. The building work has hitherto had to be performed altogether gratuitously, and only the foremen of the work, masons, carpenters, smiths, &c., receive suitable payment. As I have already mentioned, the present Governor-General has long been exerting himself to obtain fair wages for all the al-

bourers employed by the government, and this benevolent purpose was at the time of my departure advancing rapidly towards its fulfilment.

The inhabitants of towns are free from all burdens of this nature; they have no forced labour to perform, and nothing to pay but a small yearly land-tax; and every peasant may become a citizen as soon as he has performed military service for twelve years. It is especially concerning this class of people that so great an outcry has been raised; but they really are extremely idle, and in many districts, that of Amboyna especially, terribly devoted to card-playing.

The slaves are well treated in the Dutch territory, and when ill used by their masters are protected by the government; they are at liberty to lay any complaint, and the laws in their favour are not merely a dead letter, as they are in some countries. I must add, nevertheless, that, from all I have seen, not merely of Dutch India, but of all distant countries under European rule, I cannot but think those nations happier who have never fallen under the dominion of the whites. They have their sufferings indeed, and are often oppressed, but their case is seldom so bad as when they are subjected to the yoke of the covetous European.

On the 23rd of August I set out in prosecution of my journey, and with a rather numerous train; for Count Bentheim, notwithstanding my refusal, persisted in giving me another interpreter, who, besides the language of the country, spoke Dutch, of which I had managed to cram enough into my ancient head to render myself intelligible. Each of my interpreters had two coolies and a servant for himself, though I myself had but one cooly; and altogether we made a party of ten persons. This was far more than I desired, for there is more trouble in keeping such a train in order, and more difficulty everywhere in procuring horses.

We rode on sixteen miles to Padkadjene, constantly through a great plain, and between plantations of rice; indeed, the two districts of Maros and Macassar may be considered the granaries of the island. The plain of Maros particularly is of most exuberant fertility, for which the inhabitants have in a great measure to thank Count Bentheim, since he has made several aqueducts, which afford the fields a sufficient amount of irrigation.

Count Bentheim had prepared me to find bad roads, but they really exceeded my expectations; there was, in fact, no road at all; and we had to make our way as we could through the rice-fields, which are artifi-

cially kept under water. These fields are separated by narrow dykes, from which your horse may easily slip, as he has scarcely room to set one foot before the other, so that you must be every moment prepared for a fall. The animal may also find the dyke break under him, for it merely consists of soft earth. When we were not on these narrow earthen dykes we were in puddles or morasses, where our horses sometimes sunk in up to the breast, and had great difficulty in struggling out again, and, of course, on such occasions, you are bespattered with mire from head to foot. The government authorities always choose the month of August for travelling in this country, as the rice harvest is then over, and the fields dry.

A small mountain-chain, extending about fifteen miles, soon came in sight, and a higher range rose beyond it. The peculiar feature of the nearer one consisted of a long, perpendicular ridge like a wall, with a cleft here and there, through which lovely glimpses of scenery appeared. The highest point of the further range is the Maros, which rises almost perpendicularly 4,800 feet.

April 24th. We rode to Mendalli, twenty-eight miles, and crossed the River *Padkadjene* in a boat. Another river, the Segeri, we had to walk through,

and the water came up to the horses' breasts, so that they could hardly keep the ground. The greatest danger, however, was that of being attacked by caymans, of which there are plenty in the rivers of this island.

From the village of Segeri alone nineteen men were last year seized and devoured by these monsters; but these accidents do not at all prevent the people from swimming and bathing in the river. They say that, if it is your fate to be seized by a cayman, you will be, even if you should never go near the river at all.

At Segeri we dined at the house of the Regent, where we had neither forks nor spoons, but fingers afforded tolerable substitutes. In this district the frightful custom of filing and staining the teeth black begins again; and it is also fashionable to dye the nails on the hands and feet red-brown. The costume of the natives was pretty much the same as hitherto. The men wore short trousers, reaching only to the middle of the thigh, and over them a sarang; the upper part of the body remained uncovered, and their heads had the customary handkerchief. No man, however, will take a step from his hut without his parang, besides a large bag containing the ingredients for siri and the implements for smoking. These

are all worn under the sarang, and give the figure a very odd, angular appearance. Many of the men are armed with a lance, as well as a parang.

The ladies wear their sarangs of a more decorous length than I have seen them elsewhere, and sometimes draw them up quite over their heads. They more frequently, however, throw them quite loosely round the body, leaving a long piece hanging down; and it is not possible to manage this garment in a more inconvenient manner, for they must always keep one hand at liberty to hold it together. Besides the sarang, they wear a short upper robe, which reaches to the hips, and which the girls have made of quite transparent stuff; the older women of something thicker.

After dinner we set off again, and the Regent of Segeri accompanied us; and as noble a figure was this Macassar* chief, on his stately gray horse, as one could have wished to see. He was six feet high, most powerfully built, and with earnest, expressive features. He wore a dazzlingly white sarang, most picturesquely draped about his brown body, and a white handkerchief twisted round his head. The

* The inhabitants of Celebes are in the south mostly Macassars, and in the north Alforas; but the former are found scattered over the whole island.

horse had no saddle, merely a small bridle, and yet the rider sat and rode with the most perfect security and grace.

The men in Celebes are all excellent riders; you may see children of ten years old galloping about on horseback in the most undaunted manner, and without any saddle. They just put a bit of a bridle into the mouth of the steed, and away they go, without requiring any other help. When they ride slowly, they generally put up one foot against the side of the horse, which has a very odd effect. There are many studs in Celebes, as the horses from this island are frequently exported, and are famous over all India for their size and good qualities. The price of a fine one is as high as 300 rupees.

We rode to-day through many rice-fields, as well as maize, ubi, and pisang plantations; then came great tracts of *alung-alung*, or jungle-grass; and here and there little patches of forest, all in large valleys, for the mountain range lay some miles to the side.

April 25th. Our journey to-day was short, only seven miles, but very disagreeable. The roads about Mendalli had become absolutely impassable, through the frequent rains, and we were obliged to get down upon the sea-shore, and sometimes ride into the sea itself; and then, on account of the

numerous coral-reefs, we could not even always remain near the land, but had to ride out several hundred yards.* The surf was very strong, the water so troubled that we could not see the bottom; and I thanked God when I found myself once more out of the power of the hostile element, and that my horse had good dry land under his hoofs again.

In the afternoon we reached *Tannette*, an independent principality or kingdom on the eastern coast of Celebes, and since 1840 a faithful ally of Holland.

The village of Tannette lies in a pleasant plain, and a large bamboo cottage in the midst of rice-fields was pointed out to me as the palace of the Queen. It is customary at Celebes not to go at once to the residence of one of these *reigning sovereigns*, but to have yourself announced, and formal permission requested for a presentation. I dispatched, therefore, a messenger to court; the invitation followed, and I prepared for its immediate acceptance. Tannette is at present ruled by a feminine monarch, who received me on my presentation very cordially, and led me directly to her daughter, who did not come into the reception-room. The princess was turned of nineteen years old, though not yet married. She

* The four peninsulas of which Celebes consists are so long and narrow, that you continually find yourself on the sea-coast.

was indeed engaged, but the alliance was postponed or another year. It is not, it appears, the custom among the higher classes here for girls to marry before twenty, though among the lower they become wives at eleven or twelve.

The Queen and her daughters were dressed exactly like their attendants, and the suite of girls and women kept as closely behind them as their shadows. Two of these ladies of the household bore the royal insignia, consisting of a parang, cymbals, and a sceptre. One of them had the cymbals round her neck, and struck them from time to time. The palace was about seventy feet long and thirty broad, and built, like all houses in Celebes, upon piles.

The interior was divided into three chambers and a kitchen. The first, a tolerably large room, represented the drawing-room, for receiving guests. It contained a table and some chairs, and the walls and ceiling had been covered in honour of me with coloured calico. This work of decoration was carried on while I was paying my visit to the princesses. The two smaller rooms served the royal family and a part of the suite, who lay down anywhere, for sleeping and sitting-rooms. They were in a most deplorable state of litter and confusion; all sorts of household utensils lay scat-

tered about among provisions of various kinds, and parts of a beautiful tea or dinner service, cut glasses and decanters, and other fine things, such as these allies of the King of Holland frequently receive from him as presents. Baskets and boxes were piled up all round, and several clambus hung up, so that there seemed to be no room at all left for the inhabitants; and yet here these people sit, from morning till evening, doing scarcely any one thing but chewing siri and gossiping.

The only kind of work that a queen or princess ever does is the weaving a sort of riband, with which the men attach the kriss or parang to their waists. Her Majesty showed me one on which she was then engaged, and it was very tasteful, both in colour and pattern.

She was just on the point of going to Barru, a neighbouring kingdom, where she had been invited to a festival; and, as my way also lay in that direction, I went with her. We went fourteen miles on the River Tannette to the sea, on which the journey was to be continued till we came to the mouth of the River Barru; but, as the wind was much against us, we turned into a little bay, and came to anchor for the night, the Queen and part of her people going ashore.

She had with her a suite as numerous as would have sufficed for half-a-dozen queens of Europe; and more than thirty girls and women, the latter attended in their turn by their husbands. These ladies all represented women of the bed-chamber, maids of honour, &c.; but many of them were so ragged, and so extremely dirty, that I did not like them to come near me, as I thought if they did I should make some disagreeable acquisitions. The illustrious company had with them such a quantity of luggage, that it seemed as if they were about to emigrate instead of making merely a visit of a few days. The whole large boat was full of boxes, bags, and baskets, great and little; as well as of mats, cushions, and pots and pans; so that we could hardly find room to sit down, but were packed like herrings. It was a most unpleasant journey.

The girls were employed the whole way in making siri, which is here done up into the form of a cigar. A betel leaf is smeared with a little lime (made from shells), a piece of areca nut, and some gambir placed on it, and it is then rolled up and tied with a fibre of the leaf. When a leaf was too damp the court lady took up her sarang, and squeezed out the superfluous moisture against her thigh.

It is the custom when a young lady receives favourable declarations of love, for her to present

the swain with a siri cigar. If she does not make him this present he may consider himself rejected.

The whole courtly company went on chewing and spitting without ceasing into little brass pans, which they carry with them for this delicate purpose, and politely hand to one another; and the Queen at the same time had the vermin taken out of her head, while her ladies amused themselves by performing this friendly office for each other. Considering how excessively dirty they all were, I was rather amused at the extreme care taken of the drinking cups of the Queen. Not only had she a peculiar vessel, from which she alone was allowed to drink, but a particular one also to draw the water with (though it was taken from the common tub), and, moreover, a particular stand to put this particular vessel upon, which is carried with her even in travelling, and has a special bag to travel in.

August 26th. We set off on our journey in good time, and, soon reaching the mouth of the River Barru, went six or eight miles up the stream to the neighbourhood of the court we were to visit, which lies a mile from the river. The distance from Tannette is thirty-five miles. The Queen and her ladies employed the time, while the messenger was dispatched to announce our arrival, in bathing; but,

as they did not rub themselves in the least, they came out as dirty as they went in. To make amends for dirt, however, they smoked themselves with some sweet-smelling resin, melted in a little pan that they always carry with them, and over which they held their faces and hands—her Majesty of course taking precedence.

There was a female sovereign reigning also at Barru, and to this great personage I dispatched the Governor's letter wrapped in yellow satin.

The messenger returned with an envoy from the Queen, some attendants, and a sedan chair, in which they carried me to the palace, *videlicet*, a bamboo-hut; where I was received by the first minister, and presented to the sovereign. The drawing-room was forty feet broad and ninety in length, but had a very gloomy and oppressive appearance: it was very low, the roof supported on many trunks of trees, and the holes that represented windows small and few in number; but both walls and ceiling were hung with coloured cambric. In the background sat the Queen (who was only eighteen years old, and still unmarried), in a kind of open box, with a very fat duenna by her side, engaged in fanning her. At each side of her box were two large wooden images of birds, decorated with abundance of flowers.

The Queen invited me in a friendly manner to a place at her side. She was dressed in a dark-red muslin sarang embroidered in gold; and her face was agreeable, though not handsome. The Queen of Tannette and her suite had remained behind at the landing-place when I was sent for, probably because there was no other sedan than the one sent for me. She did not make her appearance all the while I remained at court, which was about two hours; so I presume she went directly to the abode appointed for her.

I had come exactly at the right time; for a grand festival was about to take place on occasion of the young Queen having her upper teeth filed, — as important an affair as the christening of an imperial infant in Brazil, or in Europe a royal wedding,—and to which all the princes and rajahs of the countries round were invited. On this very day a kind of introduction to the entertainments was to take place; and a dozen girls performed the customary tedious Malay dance on one side of the apartment, and as many boys of about fourteen years of age on the other side, rather further off.

Many men and women, doubtless persons of high birth, were crouched here and there in groups, looking on carelessly at the dancers; but no creature

spoke a word. I and my two interpreters (but no one else) were entertained with coffee, tea, a kind of sherbet, and various sweet things, amongst which were some fruits preserved in sugar as nice as could be had in Europe.

The Queen expressed much regret at not being able to lodge me in her house, but she had just then so many guests, that every place was filled over and over again; she had me conducted, however, to the house of a native, and sent thither mats, cushions, and a clambu for my furniture, and fowls and some other things for my table. When a private house is assigned to you as an abode, the inhabitants are obliged to give up the large room to you; but this does not hinder them, or any other curious personages, from coming in to stare at you whenever they think proper; and if I wished to be at peace, I had no way but to keep myself hidden under my clambu; though even that did not always secure my privacy, for they lifted up the curtain, and put their heads in.

The huts of the people in Celebes are very much larger than those in Java, Sumatra, and the Moluccas. Their principal room is from fifteen to twenty feet square, and there are two smaller ones adjoining it. Along the side of the larger one a space of about

six feet broad is parted off for the water vessels, fire places, and so on.

The villages are excessively dirty, full of puddles and filth, and the people have not the good custom of the Dyaks, of washing their feet before they come into the hut, for which purpose among them water stands ready at the door. Here they come in just as they are.

Quite close to the house I inhabited was the place where the buffaloes bivouacked, in a bed of four feet of mud, wherein they lay comfortably buried, so that you could see nothing of them but the horns and noses.

Buffaloes are everywhere plentiful in this country; yet no such thing as butter or milk is to be had For cooking, the people use cocoa nut oil, or that made from some other fruits. With respect to clothes, food, and lodging the inhabitants of Celebes are all pretty much on a level, — equally rich, or rather equally poor; at least there is no difference to be perceived in their ordinary lives. Their valuables consist of gold and silver ornaments, and little gold boxes to put the ingredients of siri in, besides silken sarangs, and handsome parangs and lances. But all these things are seen only on grand and solemn occasions, such for instance as the festivals of teeth-

filing, weddings, and royal funerals; and they spoil the appearance of the gold by colouring it so dark that it looks exactly like copper.

The sarangs are woven by the women, as they are everywhere, and they equal in fineness what is called in Germany English and Scotch linen. It takes even a clever and industrious woman a whole month to weave one. At the courts the sarangs are woven by the ladies and attendants, and every stranger who is presented gets one as a present, as I did everywhere I went.

August 27th. In the afternoon a few shots announced the commencement of the solemnity, and I betook myself to the palace, which I found already surrounded by a crowd; amongst whom were many spear-bearers, attendants of princes and great men from the neighbouring states. Some of them even had coats of chain armour, which is often worn in their war. The hall was so crowded, that I had great difficulty in making my way through; but a place was assigned me among the most illustrious of the company, the numerous princes, princesses, and so forth, whom the festival had attracted hither from all the country round. I was presented to a whole multitude of these small potentates, who swarm hereabouts, and amongst others to the heir-apparent of the kingdom of Bonni. All these personages have

to be maintained in grand style (for this country), and consequently become, as they do elsewhere, perfect vampires to the people.

The Queen had not yet made her appearance, for she too understood the advantage of keeping her subjects waiting. The floor from her apartment to the place where she was to sit was covered with white cambric muslin; and six young ladies stood ready, holding a canopy of heavy silk embroidered with gold; but a curious contrast was presented to the grandeur of the canopy itself by the six poles that supported it, which were merely rough bamboos, just as they were cut from the forest.

Music and the repeated firing of a mortar announced at length the approach of Majesty; and with slow, measured steps, and almost closed eyes, she advanced under the canopy, looking like a victim, towards her place. She was dressed in two crimson sarangs, one covering the upper, and the other the lower part of her person; and on her head she wore a garland of *melate**, with gold artificial flowers; and she was also adorned with rings, bracelets, and other jewellery.

* Melate is the name of the double jasmine, a favourite flower of the Malays and Chinese. It has an agreeable though rather powerful odour.

The Queen remained sitting motionless as a statue, with her eyes cast down, while a dozen girls formed a semicircle round her and set up a religious song or hymn. Then they brought an old half-worn-out mattrass and laid it down, spread a cloth over it, and put on some pillows and a coverlet. At this moment there arose suddenly a tremendous noise at the door, as if some people were trying to force their way in and others keeping them forcibly back. I thought it not unlikely that I was the occasion of the disturbance, and that the people took it amiss that I, a stranger, should be allowed to be present at such a solemnity; but tranquillity was soon restored, and I could not learn what had been the matter. My interpreter could give me no information; indeed, he was a very stupid fellow, who could scarcely ever tell me what I wanted to know.

An elderly man was now led beneath the canopy, and a basin of water placed at his side, over which he laid his instruments. The Queen raised herself into a sitting posture on the bed; her attendants took the flowers out of her hair, and presented a small gold saucer to a very old woman sitting near, —the oldest Queen, it appeared, among her Majesty's relatives,—and she *spat* into it a whole mouthful of blood-red coloured liquid. With this precious juice

she anointed the temples and the brow of the Queen, and also wetted a thong with it, and jerked it towards her Majesty, so as to sprinkle her whole person. After this she took a box with incense, and waved it three times round her from right to left, and once in an opposite direction. The Queen had then to lie down at full length on the mattrass, be covered over, and strewed with jasmines, while the Duenna took up a position in a crouching attitude at her head on one side, and the doctor on the other. Me they placed by the side of the Duenna, and quite close to the Queen, who took my hand and kept possession of it during the whole operation, looking the while very dismal, and sometimes casting imploring glances towards me, as if she wished to ask for my help. I waited with some anxiety to see what was to come next.

The doctor now threw into the basin three files of various sizes, put a small roll of palm-leaf between the Queen's teeth, then took the largest of the files and set to work in as vigorous style as if he had had a block of wood under his hands; then he continued the operation with a smaller file; and, before he came to the smallest, took out the palm-leaf from the royal mouth, and put in its place a little roll of betel. On the whole he got through his work well

and quickly, especially considering the clumsy instruments he had to employ. What the poor Queen suffered Heaven knows, but she uttered no sound of complaint, and I did not even feel her hand tremble.

As soon as the operation was over a cock was brought to the doctor, and he tore off a piece of the comb and smeared the teeth and lips of the sufferer with the blood that gushed out. At last the Duenna repeated, with a torch made of three lighted tapers tied together, the movements she had made with the incense box, and then the Queen returned to her former place.

Six young ladies, probably from the royal household, were to have their teeth beautified at the same time as their Queen, but there was very little ceremony made with them. They lay down on a mat without cushions or covering, the doctor pushed the little roll of leaf into their mouths, and went at it, as sailors say, with a will, and the affair was soon over.

The whole great company assembled in the hall.

* When the ceremony of teeth-filing is to take place for a person of princely rank, three festivals are held in honour of it, at intervals of several months. At the first the teeth are marked, to show how far they are to be filed, at the second the lower, and at the third the upper teeth are operated on.

Full 400 persons were entertained with tea and pastry, and to me the Queen sent also a cup of sweet sherbet and a portion of fruit preserved with sugar. I flattered myself that she took quite a personal interest in me. Neither tea nor pastry was touched, however, by anyone till a long hymn had been sung — howled would be, perhaps, a more descriptive word, — and even then the company partook very moderately of the entertainment.

I went home soon after the feast was over, for there was nothing to see then but the tedious monotonous dances. The dainties that had been set before me were, according to the custom here, sent after me to my abode; but I was not much tempted to touch them, — they were made of rice-flour, sugar, and a great quantity of oil, and were very greasy and rancid.

August 28th. Remained at Barru, as the interpreter told me there was to be fête after fête given, and the Queen would therefore not be able to spare me horses and attendants for the prosecution of my journey. Subsequently I learned that this was a falsehood, and he only said so because he found himself very comfortable here and did not wish to move. The Queen sent abundance of good provisions, he found always plenty of company to

gossip with, and he would therefore have been glad to remain, not days but weeks. No single entertainment took place but the one I have described; nothing at least but a cock-fight at the Bazaar, a recreation in which the people indulge every market-day.

August 29th. My worst trouble on this journey was that occasioned by my suite. To me, as a woman, these people did not pay the slightest attention or obedience. When I told one of the interpreters to do anything, he told the other, and he again one of the inferior attendants, who very likely would transfer the command to the one whom he considered as his inferior, namely the cooley. I had a crowd of people about me, and yet was as badly served as possible. The fellows would not even carry my butterfly-net for me, and I had to carry it myself. Another evil of this numerous train was, that we required so many horses and bearers. That my two chief gentlemen, the interpreters, would not travel on foot, it is hardly necessary to say; but their servants again required horses, even when they had but eight or nine miles to go in the day, and the finding these horses and bearers, occupied always the fine morning hours, so that we could not get away till the sun was perfectly scorching. The case

is very different, of course, when these people travel with their masters; for when they stand in awe of the stick or some other punishment they find the use of their hands and feet. I had learned that before from experience, and wished therefore only to take with me an ordinary guide and one cooley; but the Governor and Count Bentheim, though both with the kindest intentions towards me, had persuaded me to encumber myself with these troublesome helps.

We did not get into the proa to-day till ten o'clock. I had been told that for Paré-Paré, to which I wished to go, this was the nearest way; but I found afterwards that this was only because there could not be got soon enough as many horses as the interpreters required.

We had been but a few hours on the sea when the people turned into a little bay, and refused to go any further that night. I was very angry, and scraped together all the hard words in Malay and Dutch that I was mistress of, to express my sense of their behaviour. I threatened to write to Maros and Macassar, and even to send back the said two interpreters. This had some effect, and we went on and did not stop again till the evening, when we entered a bay, and came to anchor near a village. One of

the interpreters — Tolk he was called — told me then that we could not go on at night for fear of pirates, as the coast was infested by them; and this I knew to be true, and therefore made no opposition to remaining here for the night.

I slept in the little proa and had nothing to eat but rice; for my people had not even taken care to lay in provisions.

Besides our own proa, there were two small ones lying at anchor near us, and in the middle of the night we were awakened by a fearful scream. We started up in terror, thinking we were attacked by pirates, and my people seized their arms; but fortunately no one came near us. As to what might be passing on the other proas these men did not trouble themselves, although I urged them to go and see whether any one required our help. In the morning we learned that some thieves from the shore had swum to one of the proas, and stolen several things, and that the people robbed had only awakened when the thieves were escaping with their booty.

August 30*th.* At three in the afternoon we arrived at Paré-Pare; a village lying in a beautiful bay, surrounded by a fruitful plain and gently swelling hills, and encircled in the distance by a considerable range of mountains.

There were lying in the bay a tolerable number of vessels of various sizes, which had come here on trading errands from Macassar and the neighbouring islands; and the King of this little state not only gets a certain toll from them, but makes considerable profits himself in the way of commerce; so that for Celebes he may be regarded as wealthy.

As Tolk was preparing to land, in order to inquire after the abode of the King, a little canoe was pointed out to him that seemed to be coming our way, and which he was told contained the King, who was just coming home from fishing. I should really have taken him for nothing more than an ordinary fisherman, for his Majesty wore only a dirty sarang on his person and a dirty handkerchief round his head. In his residence, too, there was not much appearance of opulence, for it was only a dilapidated bamboo-hut, and the entrance lay through a puddle. In a little kind of antechamber were seated several boys and girls engaged in learning to read the Koran; but the oddest thing was, that it was being taught to them in Arabic, of which neither teachers nor pupils understand a word. They merely learn to gabble the sounds, just as in Catholic countries the boys who serve the mass sometimes do with their Latin.

From the antechamber we passed into the King's

apartment, — an ordinary Malay sitting-room, of which a portion was parted off by half-high bamboo partitions, and the remainder mostly occupied by clambus. There were also boxes and bales of goods heaped in various places, and everywhere dirt and disorder indescribable.

I understood enough of the Malay language to be able to converse with the King for several hours, and I found that he had some knowledge of geography, was in possession of several maps, and could name to me with tolerable accuracy the principal states of Europe. He had been brought up in Macassar.

He placed the map of the two hemispheres before me, and was much amazed that I could immediately show him the various parts of the world, and the chief countries; and he requested me still further to display my accomplishments by writing in his presence. I did so, and wrote as fast as possible, knowing that would astonish him, as the Malays do everything very slowly. I had to write down for him my name, country, and birthplace, both in the German and Roman character. He questioned me concerning many natural phenomena, and begged me to tell him something about the manners and customs of various nations: in short, I had to make quite a grand display of my little stock of knowledge, and had

compliments, of course; and vanity is never very nice as to what quarter praise comes from. I passed with this poor man for quite a prodigy of learning, —a character not very difficult to gain in a country where the men know very little, and the women nothing at all.* He requested me to write down for him the day of my birth, which he maintained must be some peculiarly fortunate one. When he heard that the account of my travels was printed in a book, he declared he would gladly give 100 rupees for a copy in his own language. What a gallant King! What might I not have done, and how might the plan of my travels have been extended, if I could only have induced people in Europe to think as much of me!

I expressed a wish to be presented to the Queen, and after a considerable lapse of time there appeared a woman so old as to have withered into a mere skeleton; and I was in doubt whether she was the mother or the grandmother of the King, since he did not look much more than thirty. Besides this, she

* The Malays, and, with few exceptions, all the inhabitants of Celebes, are Mahommedans; but the female sex here enjoy the same rights as the male. The eldest child of a king, of whatever sex, succeeds the father in the government; and should he leave a widow, she reigns in his place, even though there should be a grown-up son. Girls also attend the schools as well as boys.

was blind of one eye, and her hair was partly dyed a red-brown, partly black and green, and hung down over her shoulders, tangled and matted, as if it had not had a comb in it for weeks. There could hardly be imagined an uglier representative of age.

It was not till six o'clock in the evening I got into the dwelling appointed for me, and, in consequence of the negligence of my attendants, I had had nothing to eat for six-and-twenty hours. They had not carried water enough to boil the rice, and, though it happened that they had had boiled rice enough for the preceding day, when this morning I required some food, there was none to be had, and then it came out that there was no water for cooking;—one servant laid it upon the other, and the truth was, that no one had thought about it. When we got to Paré-Paré, I commissioned Tolk to get me a meal ready as soon as possible, and by the time my interview with his Majesty was over I was painfully hungry. I reached my temporary dwelling, saw smoke and steam rising as if there was much cookery going on, and flattered myself I inhaled some savoury odours; but, alas! the answer to my inquiries on this interesting subject was, "Not yet ready;" and I had to wait two mortal hours more. At least I hoped I should be rewarded for my patience with something better than usual; but there

was, after all, only rice and a fish, stewed, in some acid-tasting leaves, with water and cocoa-nut oil. It was necessary to have fasted six-and-twenty hours to enjoy such a dinner as this.

May 1st. This morning I paid the farewell visit to my polite king, and presented his wife with some bottles of eau de Cologne, and himself with a large coloured print of the Crystal Palace in Hyde Park. To impress him with an idea of the greatness of my own "Sultan" (the Emperor), I said, "Look, here is his palace. It is so high, that the highest trees can stand in it; and so large, that it takes half-an-hour to walk round it." He was much astonished, and asked many questions, concerning both Sultan and palace. He thought, however, that this one was too transparent; that the sun must blaze and burn in it so much that it would be impossible to sleep in the day-time, and he asked whether all houses were built in this manner. I said, "No; only the European Sultans live in that way, that the people may always be able to see what their fathers are doing."

After a few hours' gossip of this kind we parted, and I got away about eleven o'clock.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

London:
Printed by Spottiswoode and Co.,
New-street-Square.

00038064

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 13 February, 2016